Bruce
1706-1766
Comps
LETTERS,
SPEECHES, CHARGES,
ADVICES, &c.
OF
FRANCIS BACON,
Lord Viscount St. Alban,
Lord Chancellor of England;
Now first published
By THOMAS BIRCH, D.D.
Chaplain to her Royal Highness the Princess Amelia,
and
Secretary to the Royal Society.

LONDON,
Printed for ANDREW MILLAR in the Strand.
MDCCCLXIII.
To the Honourable

CHARLES YORKE,

Attorney General to his Majesty.

SIR,

THE gratitude, which I owe you for the honour, and other important advantages of your friendship, hath often made me wish for an opportunity of making you some return equal, in any degree, to your merit,
DEDICATION.

merit, and my own obligations. It was therefore a very agreeable incident to me, when by means of your noble brother, the Lord Viscount Royfton, always attentive to enlarge the fund of history, as well as to encourage and reward every attempt in favour of literature in general, there was put into my hands a volume of original papers of the great Lord Bacon. This volume was, at his Lordship's request, readily intrusted with me by his Grace the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, whose zeal for the advancement of useful learning of all kinds bears a just proportion to that, which he has shewn, in every station of the church filled by him, for the support of religion, and for, what is the most perfect system of its principles, laws, and sanctions, Christianity.

From
DEDICATION.

From the long acquaintance, with which I have been favoured by you, and the frequent conversations, which we have had upon subjects, foreign to the profession, which you so much adorn, I well knew your high veneration for the writings of Bacon, and your thorough knowledge of the most abstruse of them. Having therefore, with an application little less than that of decyphering, transcribed from the first draughts, and digested into order, a collection of his letters, little inferior in number, and much superior in contents, to what the world hath hitherto seen, intermixed with other papers of his of an important nature, I could not doubt, but that the publishing of them would be no less acceptable to you, than, I persuade myself, they will be to the public. For it is scarce to be imagined, but that the bringing to light, from obscurity and
DEDICATION.

Oblivion, the remains of so eminent a person, will be thought an acquisition not inferior to the discovery (if the ruins of Herculaneum should afford such a treasure) of a new set of the epistles of Cicero, whom our immortal countryman most remarkably resembled as an orator, a philosopher, a writer, a lawyer, and a statesman. The communication of them to the public appearing to me a duty to it and the memory of the author, to whom could I, separately from the consideration of all personal connexions and inducements, so justly present them, as to him, whom every circumstance of propriety, and conformity of character, in the most valuable part of it, pointed out to me for that purpose? Similarity of genius; the same extent of knowledge in the laws of our own and other countries, enriched and adorned with all the stores
DEDICATION.

Stores of ancient and modern learning; the same eloquence at the bar and in the senate; an equal force of writing, shewn in a single work indeed, and composed at a very early age, but decisive of a grand question of law and sanction of government, the grounds of which had never before been stated with due precision; and the most successful discharge of the same offices of King's Council and Solicitor and Attorney General.

These reasons, Sir, give your name an unquestionable right to be prefixed to these posthumous pieces. And I hope, while I am performing this act of justice, I may be excused the ambition of preserving my own name, by uniting it with those of Bacon and Yorke.

Your delicacy here restrains me from indulging myself farther in the language, which truth and esteem would dictate.

A 4

But
DEDICATION.

But I must be allowed to add a wish, in which every good man and lover of his country will join with me, that as there now remains but one step for you to complete that course of public service and glory, in which you have so closely followed your illustrious father, he, happy in the most important circumstance of human life, the characters and fortunes of his children,

—longo ordine Nati,
Clari omnes patria pariter Virtute suâque,

may live to see you possessed of that high station, which himself filled for almost twenty years, with a reputation superior to all the efforts of envy or party. Nor is it less to his honour, (and may it be your's at a very distant period) that, though he thought proper to retire from that station in the full vigour of his abilities, he still continues to exert them in

a more
DEDICATION.
a more private situation, for the general
benefit of his country; enjoying in it the
noblest reward of his services, an une-
qualled authority, founded on the ac-
knowledged concurrence of the greatest
capacity, experience, and integrity.

I am,

SIR,

Your most obliged

and most devoted

humble servant,

London,
June 1, 1762.

Thomas Birch.
PREFACE.

As the reader will undoubtedly have some curiosity about the history of the transmission of these papers, now presented to him at the distance of an hundred and forty years from the date of most of them, though the hand of the incomparable writer is too conspicuous in them to admit of any suspicion of their genuineness; it will be proper here to give him some information upon that subject. Dr. Thomas Tenison is known to have been the editor of the Baconiana, published at London 1679, though he added only the initial letters of his name to the account of all the Lord Bacon's works (a), subjoined to that collection. He had been an intimate friend of, and fellow of the same college (b) with, Mr. William Rawley, only son of Dr. William Rawley, chaplain to the Lord Chancellor Bacon, and employed, by his Lordship, as publisher of most of his works.

(a) This account is dated Nov. the 30th, 1678.
(b) Benet in the university of Cambridge.
P R E F A C E.

Dr. Rawley dying in the 79th year of his age, June the 18th 1667, near a year after his son (c); his executor, Mr. John Rawley, put into the hands of his friend Dr. Tenison these papers of Lord Bacon, which composed the Baconiana; and, probably, at the same time, presented to him all the rest of his Lordship's manuscripts, which Dr. Rawley had been possessed of, but did not think proper to make public. The reasons of his reserve appear from Dr. Tenison's account (d) cited above, to have been, "that he judged some papers touching matters of state to tread too near to the heels of truth, and to the times of the persons concerned: and that he thought his Lordship's letters concerning his fall might be injurious to his honour, and cause the old wounds of it to bleed anew." But this is a delicacy, which, though suitable to the age in which Dr. Rawley lived, and to the relation, under which he had stood to his noble patron, ought to have no force in other times and circumstances, nor ever to be too much indulged to the prejudice of the rights of historical truth.

Dr. Tenison being, soon after the publication of the Baconiana, removed from the more private station of a country living to the vicarage of St. Martin's in the fields, Westminster, and, (c) who was buried the 3d of July, 1666. (d) p. 81.
PREFACE.

after the Revolution, advanced to the Bishopric of Lincoln, and at last to the Archbishopric of Canterbury, had scarce leisure, if he had been inclined, to select more of the papers of his admired Bacon. These therefore, with the rest of his manuscripts, not already deposited in the library at Lambeth, were left by him in his last will, dated the 11th of April 1715, to his chaplain, Dr. Edmund Gibson, then Rector of Lambeth, and afterwards successively Bishop of Lincoln and London, and to Mr. (afterwards Dr.) Benjamin Ibbot, who had succeeded Dr. Gibson as Library-Keeper to his Grace. Dr. Ibbot dying (e) many years before Bishop Gibson, the whole collection of Archbishop Tenison's papers came under the disposition of that Bishop, who directed his two executors, the late Dr. Bettefworth, Dean of the Arches, and his eldest son, George Gibson, Esq; to deposit them, with the addition of many others of his own collecting, in the manuscript library at Lambeth: and accordingly, after his Lordship's death, which happened on the 6th of Sept. 1748, all these manuscripts were delivered by his said executors to Archbishop Herring, on the 21st of October of that year, and placed in the library on the 23d of February following. But as they lay undigested in bundles, and in that condition were neither convenient for use, (e) the 11th of April, 1725.
PREFACE.
nor secure from damage, his Grace the present
Archbishop directed them to be methodized and
bound up in volumes with proper indexes, which
was done by his learned librarian, Andrew Col-
tee Ducarel, LL. D. Fellow of the Royal and
Antiquarian Societies, to whose knowledge,
industry, and love of history and antiquities,
the valuable library of manuscripts of the
Archiepiscopal See of Canterbury is highly in-
debted for the order, in which it is now ar-
ranged; and by whose obliging and communi-
cating temper it is rendered generally usefull.
Bishop Gibson's collection, including what is
the chief part of it, that of Archbishop Tenison,
fills fourteen large volumes in folio. The eighth
of these consists merely of Lord Bacon's
papers.

Of them principally, the work, which I now
offer the public, is formed; nor has any paper
been admitted into it that had been published
before, except two of Lord Bacon's letters,
which having been disguised and mutilated in
all former impressions, were thought proper to
be reprinted here, together with two other let-
ters of his Lordship; one on the remarkable
case of Peacham, the other accompanying his
present to King James I. of his Novum Orga-
num. These letters I was unwilling to omit,
because the collection, in which they have lately
appear-
PREFACE.

appeared, intitled by the very learned and ingenious editor, Sir David Dalrymple, Bart. Memorials and Letters relating to the History of Britain in the reign of James the First, published from the Originals, at Glasgow 1762, in 8vo, is likely to be much less known in England, from the smallness of the number of printed copies, than it deserves.

The general rule, which I have prescribed myself, of publishing only what is new, restrained me from adding those letters written in the earlier part of Mr. Francis Bacon's life, which I had before published from the originals, found among the papers of his brother Antony, in the Memoirs of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth, from the Year 1581 to her death.

The example of the greatest men, in preserving in their editions of the classics the smallest remains of their writings, will be a full justification of my industry in collecting and inserting even the fragments of a writer equal to the most valuable of the ancients. Nor will the candid and intelligent object to the least considerable of the Duke of Buckingham's letters, since they acquire an importance from the rank and character of the writer, as well as from their carrying on the series of his correspondence, acquainting us with new facts, or ascertaining
PREFACE.

attaining old ones with additional evidence and circumstances, and shewing the extent of that authority and influence, which his situation, as a favourite, gave him in all parts of the government, even as high as the seat of justice itself.

ERRATA.
P. 6. l. 24. anchor, as it is in the original, should probably be anchorage.
112. paragr. 3. l. 1. for Provost’s r. Provost.
218. l. 10. for Vanbore r. Vanlore.
226. l. 5. for manes r. manos.
291. note (t) insert, at the beginning of that note, Either John Murray, of the King’s Bed-Chamber, mentioned above, p. 45, note (r); or [Thomas, &c.]
336. l. 16. for eximendi r. erigendi.
SUPPLEMENT

to

LETTERS, SPEECHES, &c.

OF

FRANCIS BACON,

Lord Viscount St. Alban.
May it please your honourable good Lordship,

Of your Lordship's honourable disposition, both generally and to me, I have that belief, as what I think, I am not afraid to speak; and what I would speak, I am not afraid to write. And therefore I have thought to commit to letter some matter, whereunto [which] I have been [conceived] led [into the same] by two motives; the one, the consideration of my own estate; the other, the appetite, which I have to give your Lordship some evidence of the thoughtful and voluntary desire, which is in me, to merit well of your most honourable Lordship: which desire in me hath been bred chiefly by the content I have to your great virtue come in good time to do this state pleasure; and next by your loving courses held towards me, especially in your nomination and inablement of me long since to the solicitor's place, as your Lordship best knows. Which your two honourable friendships I esteem so much [in so great a sort] as your countenance and favour in my practice, which are somewhat to my poverty; yet I count them not the best [greatest] part of the obligation, wherein I stand bound to you.

And now, my Lord, I pray you right humbly, that you will vouchsafe your honourable licence and

(a) From the original draught in the library of Queen's College, Oxford, Arch. D. 2. the copy of which was communicated to me by Thomas Tyrwhitt, Esq; clerk of the Honourable House of Commons. Sir William Dugdale in his Baronage of England, Vol. II. p. 438, has given two short passages of this letter transcribed by him from the unpublished original.
A»

patient, that I may express to you, what in a doubt-
ful liberty I have thought fit, partly by way of
praying your help, and partly by way of offering
my good will; partly again by way of pre-occupat-
ing your conceit, lest you may in some things
mistake.

My estate, to confess a truth to your Lordship,
is weak and indebted, and needeth comfort; for
both my father, though I think I had greatest
part in his love to all his children, yet in his wis-
dom served me in as a last comer; and myself, in
mine own industry, have rather referred and as-
pired to virtue than to gain: whereof I am not
yet wise enough to repent me. But the while,
whereas Solomon speaketh, that want cometh first
like a way-faring man, and after like an armed man,
I must acknowledge to your Lordship myself to [be]
in primo gradu; for it stealeth upon me. But for
the second, that it should not be able to be reflied,
I hope in God I am not in that case; for the pre-
venting whereof, as I do depend upon God's provi-
dence all in all, so in the fame his providence I fee
opened unto me three not unlikely expectations of
help: the one my praetile; the other some pro-
ceeding in the Queen's service; the third [the]
place I have in reversion; which, as it standeth now
unto me, is but like another man's ground reaching
upon my house, which may mend my prospect, but
it doth not fill my barn.

For my praetile, it presupposeth my health, which,
if I should judge of, as a man that judgeth of a
fair morrow by a fair evening, I might have reason
to value well. But myself having this error of
mind, that I am apter to conclude in every thing of
change from the present tense than of a continuance,
do make no such appointment. Besides, I am not so
far deceived in myself, but that I know very well,
and I think your Lordship is major corde, and in

your
your wisdom you note it more deeply than I can in myself, that in practising the law, I play not all my best game, which maketh me accept it with a nisi quid potius, as the best of my fortune, and a thing agreeable to better gifts than mine, but not to mine.

For my placing, your Lordship best knows, that when I was much dejected with her Majesty's strange dealing towards me, it pleased you of your singular favour so far to comfort and encourage me, as to hold me worthy to be excited to think of succeeding your Lordship in your second place (6); signifying in your plainness, that no man should better content yourself: which your exceeding favour you have not since varied from, both in pleading the like signification into the hands of some of my best friends, and also in an honourable and answerable nomination and commendation of me to her Majesty. Wherein I hope your Lordship, if it please you to call to mind, did find me neither overweening in presuming too much upon it, nor much deceived in my opinion of the event for the continuing it still in your self, nor sleepy in doing some good offices to the same purpose.

Now upon this matter I am to make your Lordship three humble requests, which had need be very reasonable, coming so many together. First, that your Lordship will hold and make good your wishes towards me in your own time; for no other I mean it; and in thankfulness thereof, I will present your Lordship with the fairest flower of my estate; though it yet bear no fruit; and that is the poor reversion, which of her Majesty's gift I hold;

(6) The master-ship of the Rolls; which office the Lord Keeper held till the Lord Bruce was advanced to it, May 18, 1603.
in the which I shall be no less willing Mr. John Egerton (c), if it seem good to you, should succeed me in that, than I would be willing to succeed your Lordship in the other place.

My next humble request is, that your Lordship would believe a protestation, which is, that if there be now against the next term, or hereafter (for a little bought knowledge of the court teacheth me to foresee these things) any heaving or palting at that place, upon mine honesty and troth, my spirit is not in, nor with it; I, for my part, being resolutely resolved not to proceed one pace or degree in this matter but with your Lordship's foreknowledge and approbation. The truth of which protestation will best appear, if by any accident, which I look not for, I shall receive any further strength. For, as I now am, your Lordship may impute it only to policy alone in me, that being without present hope myself, I would be content the matter sleep.

My third humble petition to your Lordship is, that you would believe an intelligence, and not take it for a fiction in court; of which manner I like Cicero's speech well, who writing to Appius Claudius faith; *Sìm autem quae tibi ipsi in mentem veniant, ea alius tribuere soles, inducis genus sermonis in amicitiam minime liberale.* But I do assure your Lordship, it is both true and fresh, and from a person of that fort, as having some glimpse of it before, I now

(c) second son of the Lord Keeper, whose eldest son Sir Thomas, knighted at Cadiz upon the taking it in 1596 by the Earl of Essex, died in Ireland, whither he attended that Earl in 1599, as Mr. John Egerton likewise did, and was knighted by his Lordship, and at the coronation of King James was made knight of the Bath. He succeeded his father in the titles of Baron of Ellesmere and Viscount Brackley, and on the 17th of May, 1617, was created Earl of Bridgewater.
rest fully confirmed in it: and it is this, that there should be a plot laid of some strength between Mr. Attorney General (d), and Mr. Attorney of the Wards (e), for the one's remove to the Rolls, and the other to be drawn to his place. Which, to be plain with your Lordship, I do apprehend much. For first, I know Mr. Attorney General, whatsoever he pretendeth or protesteth to your Lordship, or any other, doth seek it; and I perceive well by his dealing towards his best friends, to whom he oweth most, how perfectly he hath conned the adage of proximus egomet mihi: and then I see no man ripened for the place of the Rolls in competition with Mr. Attorney General. And lastly, Mr. Attorney of the Wards being noted for a pregnant and stirring man, the objection of any hurt her Majesty's business may receive in her causes by the drawing up of Mr. Attorney General, will wax cold. And yet nevertheless, if it may please your Lordship to pardon me so to say, of the second of those placings I think with some scorn; only I commend the knowledge hereof to your Lordship's wisdom, as a matter not to be neglected.

And now lastly, my honourable good Lord, for my third poor help, I account [it] will do me small good, except there be a heave; and that is this place of the Star-Chamber. I do confess ingenuously to your Lordship, out of my love to the publick, besides my particular, that I am of opinion, that rules without examples will do little good, at least not to continue; but that there is such a concordance between the time to come, and the time past, as there will be no reforming the one

(d) Coke.

(e) Probably Sir Thomas Heskett, who died 15 October 1605, and has a monument erected to his memory in Westminster-Abbey.
without informing of the other. And I will not, as the proverb is, spit against the wind, but yield so far to a general opinion, as there was never a more * * or particular example. But I submit it wholly to your honourable grave consideration; only I humbly pray you to conceive, that it is not any money, that I have borrowed of Mr. Mills, nor any gratification I receive for my aid, that makes me shew myself any ways in it, but simply a desire to preserve the rights of the office, as far as it is meet and incorrupt; and secondly his importunity, who nevertheless, as far as I see, taketh a course to bring this matter in question to his farther disadvantage, and to be principal in his own harm. But if it be true, that I have heard of more than one or two, that besides this fore-running in taking of fees, there are other deep corruptions, which in an ordinary course are intended to be proved against him; surely, for my part, I am not superstitious, as I will not take any shadow of it, nor labor to stop it, since it is a thing medicinable for the office of the realm. And then if the place by such an occasion or otherwise should come in possession, the better to testify my affection to your Lordship, I should be glad, as I offered it to your Lordship by way of [surrender] so in this case to offer it by way of joint-patency, in nature of a reversion, which, as it is now, there wanteth no good will in me to offer, but that both in that condition it is not worth the offering; and besides, I know not whether my necessity may enforce me to sell it away; which, if it were locked in by any reversion or joint-patency, I were disabled to do for my relief.

Thus your Lordship may perceive how assured a persuasion I have of your love towards me, and care of me, which hath made me so freely to communicate of my poor state with your Lordship, as I could have done to my honourable father, if he had
had liyed: which I most humbly pray your Lordship may be private to yourself, to whom I commit it to be used to such purpose, as in your wisdom and honourable love and favour should seem good. And so humbly craving pardon, I commend your Lordship to the divine preservation.

At your Lordship's honourable commandment humbly and particularly.

In Henricum Principem Walliae Elogium Francisci Bacoii (a).

HENRICUS primogenitus Regis Magnae Britanniae, Princeps Walliae, antea fpe beatus, nunc memorii felix, diem suum obit 6. Novemb. anno 1612. In magni totius regni lucetu et desiderio extinstus est, utpote adolescens, qui animos hominum nec offendisset, nec satiaisset. Excitaverat autem propter bonam indolem multiplicies apud plurimos omnium ordinum spes, nec ob brevitate vitae frustraverat. Illud imprimit accessit, quod in causâ religionis firmus vulgo habebatur: prudentioribus quoque hoc animo penitus insiderat, adversus insidias conjunctionum ( cui malo ætas nostra vix remedium reperit) patri eum instar praedidii et scuti suisse, adeo ut et religionis et regis apud populum amor in eum redundaret, et in æstimationem jaeturæ meritò annumeraretur. Erat corpore validus et erectus, statuâ mediocri,

(a) Harl. MSS. Vol. 1893. fol. 75. It seems to me no improbable supposition, that this character was intended to be sent to Thuanus, in order to be inserted in his excellent history, if he should have continued it to the year 1612, whereas it reached only to 1607.
studia ipfa, quibus capiebatur maximè, porius tempora patiebantur quam excessus, et magis repetita erant per vices, quam quod extaret aliquod unum, quod reliqua superaret et compecesset, sive ea moderate ratio fuit, sive in naturâ non admodum præcoci, sed lentè maturefcente, non cernebantur adhuc quæ prævalitura erant. Ingenio certè pollebat, eratque et curiosus fatis et capax, sed fermente tardior et tanquam impeditus: tamen si quis diligenter observaverat ea, quæ ab eo proferebantur, sive quaestionis vim obtinebat, sive sententiaæ, ad rem omnino erant, et captum non vulgarem arguebant; ut in illà loquendi tarditate et raritate judicium ejus magis suspensum videretur et anxium, quam infirmum aut hebes. Interim audiendo miris modis patiens, etiam in negotiis, quæ in longitudinem porrigebantur; idque cum attentione et sine tædio, ut raro animo peregrinaretur aut fessâ mente aliquid ageret, sed ad ea, quæ dicebantur aut agebantur, animum adverteret atque applicaret; quod magnam ei (si vita suppetiuisset) prudentiam spondebat. Certe in illius principis naturâ plurima erant obscura, neque judicio cujuspiam patefacienda, sed tempore, quod ei præreptum est. Attamen quæ apparebant, optima erant, quod famæ fatis est. Mortuus est ætatis suæ anno decimo nono ex febri contumaci, quæ ubique à magnis et insulanis fere insolitis siccitatibus ac fervoribus orta per æstatem populariter graffiabatur, sed raro funere; dein sub autumnum erat facta lethali. Addidit fama atrocior (ut ille (b) ait) erga dominantium exitus suspicione veneni. Sed cum nulla ejus rei extarent indicia, præsertim in ventriculo, quod præcipue a veneno pati folet, is sermo citò evanuit.

(b) Tacit. Annal. I. iv. 17.
The following Translation is an attempt, for the sake of the English Reader, to give the sense of the original, without pretending to reach the force and conciseness of expression peculiar to the great Writer as well as to the Roman Language.

HENRY Prince of Wales, eldest son of the King of Great-Britain, happy in the hopes conceived of him, and now happy in his memory, died on the 6th of Nov. 1612, to the extreme concern and regret of the whole kingdom, being a youth, who had neither offended nor fatiated the minds of men. He had by the excellence of his disposition excited high expectations among great numbers of all ranks; nor had through the shortness of his life disappointed them. One capital circumstance added to these was the esteem, in which he was commonly held, of being firm to the cause of religion: and men of the best judgment were fully persuaded, that his life was a great support and security to his father from the danger of conspiracies; an evil, against which our age has scarce found a remedy; so that the people's love of religion and the King overflowed to the prince; and this consideration deservedly heightened the sense of the loss of him. His person was strong and erect; his stature of a middle size; his limbs well made; his gait and deportment majestic; his face long and inclining to leanness; his habit of body full; his look grave, and the motion of his eyes rather composed than spirited. In his countenance were some marks of severity, and in his air some appearance of haughtiness. But whoever looked beyond these outward circumstances, and addressed and softened him with a due respect and seasonable discourse, found the prince to be gracious and easy; so that he seemed wholly different in conversation from what he was in appearance,
ance, and in fact raised in others an opinion of himself very unlike what his manner would at first have suggested. He was unquestionably ambitious of commendation and glory, and was strongly affected by every appearance of what is good and honourable; which in a young man is to be considered as virtue. Arms and military men were highly valued by him; and he breathed himself something warlike. He was much devoted to the magnificence of buildings and works of all kinds, though in other respects rather frugal; and was a lover both of antiquity and arts. He shewed his esteem of learning in general more by the countenance, which he gave to it, than by the time, which he spent in it. His conduct in respect of morals did him the utmost honour; for he was thought exact in the knowledge and practice of every duty. His obedience to the King his father was wonderfully strict and exemplary: towards the Queen he behaved with the highest reverence: to his brother he was indulgent; and had an entire affection for his sister, whom he resembled in person as much as that of a young man could the beauty of a virgin. The instructors of his younger years (which rarely happens) continued high in his favour. In conversation he both expected a proper decorum, and practised it. In the daily business of life, and the allotment of hours for the several offices of it, he was more constant and regular than is usual at his age. His affections and passions were not strong, but rather equal than warm. With regard to that of love, there was a wonderful silence, considering his age, so that he passed that dangerous time of his youth in the highest fortune, and in a vigorous state of health, without any remarkable imputation of gallantry. In his court no person was observed to have any ascendant over him, or strong interest with him: and even the studies, with which he was most delighted, had rather proper times assigned them,
them, than were indulged to excess, and were rather repeated in their turns, than that any one kind of them had the preference of, and controlled the rest; whether this arose from the moderation of his temper, and that in a genius not very forward, but ripening by slow degrees, it did not yet appear what would be the prevailing object of his inclination. He had certainly strong parts, and was endued with both curiosity and capacity; but in speech he was slow, and in some measure hesitating. But whoever diligently observed what fell from him either by way of question or remark, saw it to be full to the purpose, and expressive of no common genius. So that under that slowness and infrequency of discourse, his judgment had more the appearance of suspense and solicititude to determine rightly, than of weakness and want of comprehension. In the mean time he was wonderfully patient in hearing, even in business of the greatest length; and this with unwearied attention, so that his mind seldom wandered from the subject, or seemed fatigued, but he applied himself wholly to what was said or done: which (if his life had been lengthened) promised a very superior degree of knowledge. There were indeed in the prince some things obscure, and not to be discovered by the sagacity of any person, but by time only, which was denied him; but what appeared were excellent, which is sufficient for his fame.

He died in the 19th year of his age, of an obstinate fever, which during the summer, through the excessive heat and dryness of the season, unusual to islands, had been epidemic, though not fatal, but in autumn became more mortal. Fame, which, as Tacitus says, is more tragical with respect to the deaths of princes, added a suspicion of poison: but as no signs of this appeared, especially in his stomach, which uses to be chiefly affected by poison, this report soon vanished.
To the Reverend University of Oxford (a):

Amongst the gratulations I have received, none are more welcome and agreeable to me than your letters, wherein the less I acknowledge of those attributes you give me, the more I must acknowledge of your affection, which bindeth me no less to you, that are professors of learning, than mine own dedication doth to learning itself. And therefore you have no need to doubt, but I will emulate (as much as in me is) towards you the merits of him that is gone, by how much the more I take myself to have more propriety in the principal motive thereof. And for the equality you write of, I shall by the grace of God (far as may concern me) hold the balance as equally between the two Universities, as I shall hold the balance of other justice between party and party. And yet in both cases I must meet with some inclinations of affection, which nevertheless shall not carry me aside. And so I commend you to God's goodness.

Your most loving

Gorhambury, And assured friend,
April 12, 1617.

Fr. Bacon.

(a) This and the following letter are from the collections of the late Robert Stephens, Esq; historiographer royal, and John Locker, Esq; deceas'd, now in possession of the editor.
To the Lord Keeper Bacon.

My Lord,

If your man had been addressed only to me, I should have been careful to have procured him a more speedy dispatch; but now you have found another way of address, I am excused; and since you are grown weary of employing me, I can be no otherwise in being employed. In this business of my brother's, that you overtrouble yourself with, I understand from London by some of my friends, that you have carried yourself with much scorn and neglect both toward myself and friends; which, if it prove true, I blame not you, but myself, who was ever

Your Lordship's assured friend,

[July 1617.]

G. Buckingham.
LETTERS, &c.

OF

Lord Chancellor BACON.

Mr. Francis Bacon to Sir John Puckering,

Lord Keeper of the Great Seal (a).

My Lord,

IT is a great grief unto me, joined with marvell,
that her Majesty should retain an hard conceit of
my speeches in parliament (b). It might please
her sacred Majesty to think what my end should be
in those speeches, if it were not duty, and duty
alone. I am not so simple, but I know the common
beaten way to please. And whereas popularity hath
been objected, I muse what care I should take to
please many, that take a course of life to deal
with few. On the other side, her Majesty's grace
and particular favour towards me hath been such, as
I esteem no worldly thing above the comfort to enjoy
it, except it be the conscience to deserve it. But if

(b) on Wednesday the 7th of March, 1597, upon the three
subsidiies demanded of the house of commons; to which he
assented, but not to the payment of them under six years, urging
the necessities of the people, the danger of raising public discontentment,
and the setting of an evil precedent against themselves and their posterity. See Sir Simonds D'Ewes's Journals, p. 493.
He sat in that parliament, which met November 19, 1592, and
was dissolved 10 April, 1593, as one of the knights of the shire
for Middlesex.
LETTERS, &c. of

the next seconding of some particular person's opinion shall be presumption, and to differ upon the manner shall be to impeach the end; it shall teach my devotion not to exceed wishes, and those in silence. Yet notwithstanding (to speak vainly as in grief) it may be her Majesty hath discouraged as good a heart, as ever looked toward her service, and as void of self-love. And so in more grief than I can well express, and much more than I can well dissemble, I leave your Lordship, being as ever,

Your Lordship's entirely devoted, &c.

*The First Copy of my discourse touching the safety of the Queen's person.*

These be the principal remedies, I could think of, for extirping the principal cause of those conspiracies, by the breaking the nest of those fugitive traitors, and the filling them full of terror, despair, jealousy, and revolt. And it is true, I thought of some other remedies, which, because in mine own conceit I did not so well allow, I therefore do forbear to express. And so likewise I have thought, and thought again, of the means to stop and divert as well the attempts of violence, as poison, in the performance and execution. But not knowing how my travell may be accepted, being the unwarranted wishes of a private man, I leave; humbly praying her Majesty's pardon, if in the zeal of my simplicity I have roved at things above my aim.

*The first fragments of a discourse, touching intelligence and the safety of the Queen's person.*

The first remedy, in my poor opinion, is that, against which, as I conceive, least exception can be taken, as a thing, without controversy, honourable and
and politic; and that is reputation of good intelligence. I say not only good intelligence, but the reputation and fame thereof. For I see, that where booths are set for watching thievish places, there is no more robbing: and though no doubt the watchmen many times are asleep, or away; yet that is more than the thief knoweth; so as the empty booth is strength and safeguard enough. So likewise, if there be sworn an opinion abroad, that her Majesty hath much secret intelligence, and that all is full of spies and false brethren; the fugitives will grow into such a mutual jealousy and suspicion one of another, as they will not have the confidence to conspire together, not knowing whom to trust; and thinking all practice bootless, as that, which is assured to be discovered. And to this purpose, to speak reverently, as becometh me, as I do not doubt, but those honourable counsellors, to whom it doth appertain, do carefully and sufficiently provide and take order, that her Majesty receive good intelligence; so yet, under correction, methinks it is not done with that glory and note of the world, which was in Mr. Secretary Walsingham’s (c) time: and in this case, as was said, opinio veritate major.

The second remedy I deliver with less assurance, as that, which is more removed from the compass of mine understanding; and that is, to treat and negotiate with the King of Spain, or Archduke Ernest (d), who

(c) Who died April 6, 1590. After his death the business of secretary of state appears to be chiefly done by Mr. Robert Cecil, who was knighted by Queen Elizabeth at Theobald’s, about the beginning of June, 1591, and in August following sworn of the privy-council; but not actually appointed secretary of state till July 5, 1596.

(d) Ernest, Archduke of Austria, son of the Emperor Maximilian II, and governor of the Low Countries, upon which government he entered in June, 1594; but held it only a short time, dying February 11 following. It was probably in pursuance of the advice of Mr. Francis Bacon in this paper, that Queen
who resides in the place, where these conspiracies are most forged, upon the point of the law of nations, upon which kind of points, princes enemies may with honour negotiate, viz. that, contrary to the same law of nations, and the sacred dignity of kings, and the honour of arms, certain of her Majesty's subjects (if it be not thought meet to impeach any of his ministers) refuged in his dominions, have confpired and practised assassination against her Majesty's person.

(e) The speeches drawn up by Mr. Francis Bacon for the Earl of Essex in a device (f) exhibited by his Lordship before Queen Elizabeth, on the anniversary of her accession to the throne, November 17, 1595.

The Squire's speech.

MOST excellent and most glorious Queen, give me leave, I befeech your Majesty, to offer my master's complaint and petition; complaint, that

Queen Elizabeth sent to the Archduke, in 1594, to complain of the designs, which had been formed against her life by the Count de Fuentes, and Don Diego de Ibarra, and other Spanish ministers concerned in governing the Low Countries after the death of Alexander Duke of Parma in December 1592, and by the English fugitives there; and to desire him to signify those facts to the King of Spain, in order that he might vindicate his own character; by punishing his ministers, and delivering up to her such fugitives, as were parties in such designs. Camdeni Annales Eliz. Regina, p. 625. Edit. Lugduni Bat. 1625.

(e) Bishop Gibson's Papers, Vol. V. No 118.

(f) An account of this device, which was much applauded, is given by Mr. Rowland Whyte to Sir Robert Sydney, in a letter dated at London, Saturday the 22d of November, 1595, and printed in the Letters and Memorials of State of the Sydney Family, Vol. I. p. 362. According to this letter, the Earl of Essex, some considerable time before he came himself into the Tilt-yard, sent his page with some speech to the Queen, who returned
Lord Chancellor B A C O N.

coming hither to your Majesty's most happy day, he is tormented with the importunity of a melancholy dreaming hermit, a mutinous brain-fick soldier, and a busy tedious secretary. His petition is, that he may be as free as the rest; and, at least while he is here, troubled with nothing but with care how to please and honour you.

returned with her Majesty's glove; and when his lordship came himself, he was met by an old hermit, a secretary of state, a brave soldier, and an esquire. The first presented him with a book of meditations; the second with political discourses; the third with orations of bravely fought battles; the fourth was his own follower, to whom the other three imparted much of their purpose before the Earl came in. "Another, add Mr. Whyte, "devised with him, persuading him to this and that course of life, according to their inclinations. Comes into the Tilt-yard, "unthought upon, the ordinary post-boy of London, a ragged "villain, all bemired, upon a poor lean jade, galloping and "blowing for life, and delivered the secretary a packet of letters, which he presently offered my Lord of Essex. And with "this dumb flew our eyes were fed for that time. In the after-"supper, before the Queen, they first delivered a well-penned "speech to move this worthy knight to leave his following of "love, and to betake him to heavenly meditation; the secre-"tary's all tending to have him follow matters of state; the "soldier's persuading him to the war: but the squire answered "them all, and concluded with an excellent, but too plain, "English, that this knight would never forsake his mistref's "love, whose virtue made all his thoughts divine; whose wis-"dom taught him all true policy; whose beauty and worth were "at all times able to make him fit to command armies. He "shewed all the defects and imperfections of all their times; "and therefore thought his course of life to be best in serving "his mistref's." Mr. Whyte then mentions, that the part of the old hermit was performed by him, who at Cambridge played that of Giraldi; that Morley acted the secretary; and that the soldier was represented by him, who acted the pedant, and that Mr. Tobie Matthew was the squire. "The world, says Mr. "Whyte, makes many untrue constructions of these speeches, "comparing the hermit and the secretary to two of the lords; "and the soldier to Sir Roger Williams. But the Queen said, "that if she had thought there had been so much said of her, "she would not have been there that night; and so went to "bed."
Though our ends be diverse, and therefore may be one more just than another; yet the complaint of this Squire is general, and therefore alike unjust against us all. Albeit he is angry, that we offer ourselves to his master uncalled, and forgets we come not of ourselves, but as the messengers of self-love, from whom, all that comes, should be well taken. He faith, when we come, we are importunate. If he mean, that we err in form, we have that of his master, who being a lover, useth no other form of soliciting. If he will charge us to err in matter, I for my part will presently prove, that I persuade him to nothing but for his own good. For I wish him to leave turning over the book of fortune, which is but a play for children; when there be so many books of truth and knowledge, better worthy the revolving; and not fix his view only upon a picture in a little table, when there be so many tables of histories, yea to life, excellent to behold and admire. Whether he believe me or no, there is no prison to the prison of the thoughts, which are free under the greatest tyrants. Shall any man make his conceit, as an anchor, murred up with the compass of one beauty or person, that may have the liberty of all contemplation? Shall he exchange the sweet travelling through the universal variety, for one wearisome and endless round or labyrinth? Let thy master, Squire, offer his service to the muses. It is long since they received any into their court. They give alms continually at their gate, that many come to live upon; but few they have ever admitted into their palace. There shall he find secrets not dangerous to know; sides and parties not factious to hold; precepts and commandments not penal to disobey. The gardens of love, wherein he now placeth himself,
self, are fresh to day, and fading to-morrow, as the sun comforts them, or is turned from them. But the gardens of the muses keep the privilege of the golden age; they ever flourish, and are in league with time. The monuments of wit survive the monuments of power. The verses of a poet endure without a syllable lost, while states and empires pass many periods. Let him not think he shall descend; for he is now upon a hill, as a ship is mounted upon the ridge of a wave: but that hill of the muses is above tempests, always clear and calm; a hill of the goodliest discovery, that man can have, being a prospect upon all the errors and wanderings of the present and former times. Yea, in some cliff it leadeth the eye beyond the horizon of time, and giveth no obscure divinations of times to come. So that if he will indeed lead vitam vitalem, a life, that unites safety and dignity, pleasure and merit; if he will win admiration without envy; if he will be in the feast, and not in the throng; in the light, and not in the heat; let him embrace the life of study and contemplation. And if he will accept of no other reason, yet because the gift of the muses will enworth him in love, and where he now looks on his mistress's outside with the eyes of sense, which are dazzled and amazed, he shall then behold her high perfections and heavenly mind with the eyes of judgement, which grow stronger by more nearly and more directly viewing such an object.

The Soldier's Speech.

Squire, the good old man hath said well to you; but I dare say, thou wouldst be sorry to leave to carry thy master's shield, and to carry his books: and I am sure thy master had rather be a falcon, a bird of prey, than a singing bird in a cage. The muses
muses are to serve martial man, to sing their famous actions; and not to be served by them. Then hearken to me.

It is the war, that giveth all spirits of valour, not only honour, but contentment. For mark, whether ever you did see a man grown to any honourable commandment in the wars, but whenever he gave it over, he was ready to die with melancholy? Such a sweet felicity is in that noble exercise, that he, that hath tasted it thoroughly, is distasted for all other. And no marvell; for if the hunter takes such solace in his chase; if the matches and wagers of sport pass away with such satisfaction and delight; if the looker on be affected with pleasure in the representation of a feigned tragedy; think what contentment a man receiveth, when they, that are equal to him in nature, from the height of infolvency and fury are brought to the condition of a chaced prey; when a victory is obtained, whereof the victories of games are but counterfeits and shadows; and when, in a lively tragedy, a man’s enemies are sacrificed before his eyes to his fortune.

Then for the dignity of military profession, is it not the truest and perfectest practice of all virtues? of wisdom, in disposing those things, which are most subject to confusion and accident: of justice, in continual distributing rewards: of temperance, in exercising of the straitest discipline: of fortitude, in toleration of all labours and abstinence from effeminate delights: of constancy, in bearing and digesting the greatest variety of fortune. So that when all other places and professions require but their several virtues, a brave leader in the wars must be accomplished with all. It is the wars, that are the tribunal feast, where the highest rights and possessions are decided; the occupation of kings, the root of nobility, the protection of all estates. And lastly, lovers never thought their profession sufficiently graced, till they
they have compared it to a warfare. All, that in any other profession can be wished for, is but to live happily: but to be a brave commander in the field, death itself doth crown the head with glory. Therefore, Squire, let thy matter go with me; and though he be resolved in the pursuit of his love, let him aspire to it by the noblest means. For ladies count it no honour to subdue them with their fairest eyes, which will be daunted with the fierce encounter of an enemy. And they will quickly discern a champion fit to wear their glove from a page not worthy to carry their pantofle. Therefore I lay again, let him seek his fortune in the field, where he may either lose his love, or find new argument to advance it.

The Statesman's speech.

Squire, my advice to thy master shall be as a token wrapped up in words; but then will it shew itself fair, when it is unfolded in his actions. To wish him to change from one humour to another, were but as if, for the cure of a man in pain, one should advise him to lie upon the other side, but not enable him to stand on his feet. If from a fanguine delightful humour of love, he turn to a melancholy retired humour of contemplation, or a turbulent boiling humour of the wars; what doth he but change tyrants? Contemplation is a dream; love a trance; and the humour of war is raving. These be shifts of humour, but no reclaiming to reason. I debar him not studies nor books, to give him stay and variety of conceit, to refresh his mind, to cover sloth and indisposition, and to draw to him from those, that are studious, respect and commendation. But let him beware, lest they possess not too much of his time; that they abstract not his judgement from present experience, nor make him presume upon knowing
knowing much, to apply the less. For the wars, I deny him no enterprise, that shall be worthy in greatness, likely in success, or necessary in duty; not mixed with any circumstance of jealousy, but duly laid upon him. But I would not have him take the alarm from his own humour, but from the occasion; and I would again he should know an employment from a discounting. And for his love, let it not disarm his heart within, as it make him too credulous to favours, nor too tender to unkindnesses, nor too apt to depend upon the heart he knows not. Nay, in his demonstration of love, let him not go too far; for these feely lovers, when they profess such infinite affection and obligation, they tax themselves at so high a rate, that they are ever under arrest. It makes their service seem nothing, and every cavil or imputation very great. But what, Squire, is thy master's end? If to make the prince happy he serves, let the instructions to employ men, the relations of ambassadours, the treaties between princes, and actions of the present time, be the books he reads: let the orations of wise princes, or experimented counsellors in council or parliament, and the final sentences of grave and learned judges in weighty and doubtful causes, be the lecturers he frequents. Let the holding of affection with confederates without charge, the frustrating of the attempts of enemies without battles, the intitling of the crown to new possessions without thew of wrong, the filling of the prince's coffers without violence, the keeping of men in appetite without impatience, be the inventions he seeks out. Let policy and matters of state be the chief, and almost the only thing, he intends. But if he will believe Philautia, and seek most his own happiness, he must not of them embrace all kinds, but make choice, and avoid all matter of peril, displeasure, and charge, and turn them over to some novices, that know not manacles from brac-
lets, nor burdens from robes. For himself, let him let for matters of commodity and strength, though they be joined with envy. Let him not trouble himself too laboriously to sound into any matter deeply, or to execute any thing exactly; but let himself make himself cunning rather in the humours and drifts of persons, than in the nature of business and affairs. Of that it sufficeth to know only so much, as may make him able to make use of other men's wits, and to make again a smooth and pleasing report. Let him entertain the proposition of others, and ever rather let him have an eye to the circumstances, than to the matter itself; for then shall he ever seem to add somewhat of his own: and besides, when a man doth not forget so much as a circumstance, men do think his wit doth superabound for the substance. In his counsels let him not be confident; for that will rather make him obnoxious to the success; but let him follow the wisdom of oracles, which uttered that, which might ever be applied to the event. And ever rather let him take the side, which is likeliest to be followed, than that which is soundest and best, that every thing may seem to be carried by his direction. To conclude, let him be true to himself, and avoid all tedious reaches of state, that are not merely pertinent to his particular. And if he will needs pursue his affection, and go on his course, what can so much advance him in his own way? The merit of war is too outwardly glorious to be inwardly grateful: and it is the exile of his eyes, which looking with such affection upon the picture, cannot but with infinite contentment behold the life. But when his mistress shall perceive, that his endeavours are become a true support of her, a discharge of her care, a watchman of her person, a scholar of her wisdom, an instrument of her operation, and a conduit of her virtue; this, with his diligences, access, humility, and patience, may move
move him to give her further degrees and approaches to her favour. So that I conclude, I have traced him the way to that, which hath been granted to some few, amare et sapere, to love and be wise.

The reply of the Squire.

Wandering Hermit, storming Soldier, and hollow Statesman, the enchanting orators of Philautia, which have attempted by your high charms to turn resolved Erophiplot into a statue deprived of action, or into a vulture attending about dead bodies, or into a monster with a double heart; with infinite assurance, but with just indignation, and forced patience, I have suffered you to bring in play your whole forces. For I would not vouchsafe to combat you one by one, as if I trusted to the goodness of my breath, and not the goodness of my strength, which little needeth the advantage of your fevering, and much less of your disagreeing. Therefore, first, I would know of you all what assurance you have of the fruit, whereto you aspire.

You, Father, that pretend to truth and knowledge, how are you assured, that you adore not vain chimæra's and imaginations? that in your high prospect, when you think men wander up and down; that they stand not indeed still in their place? and it is some smoke or cloud between you and them, which moveth, or else the dazzling of your own eyes? Have not many, which take themselves to be inward counsellors with nature, proved but idle believers, which told us tales, which were no such matter? And, Soldier, what security have you for these victories and garlands, which you promise to yourself? Know you not of many, which have made provision of laurel for the victory, and have been fain to exchange it with cypræs for the funeral? of many, which
which have bespoken fame to found their triumphs, and have been glad to pray her to say nothing of them, and not to discover them in their flights?

Corrupt Statesman, you that think by your engines and motions to govern the wheel of fortune; do you not mark, that clocks cannot be long in temper? that jugglers are no longer in request, when their tricks and flights are once perceived? Nay, do you not see, that never any man made his own cunning and practice (without religion and moral honesty) his foundation, but he overbuilt himself, and in the end made his house a windfall? But give ear now to the comparison of my master's condition, and acknowledge such a difference, as is betwixt the melting hail-stone and the solid pearl. Indeed it seemeth to depend, as the globe of the earth seemeth to hang, in the air; but yet it is firm and stable in itself. It is like a cube, or a die-form, which toss it or throw it any way, it ever lighteth upon a square. Is he denied the hopes of favours to come? He can resort to the remembrance of contentments past. Destiny cannot repeal that, which is past. Doth he find the acknowledgement of his affection small? He may find the merit of his affection the greater. Fortune cannot have power over that, which is within. Nay, his falls are like the falls of Antæus; they renew his strength. His clouds are like the clouds of harvest, which makes the sun break forth with greater force. His wanes are changes like the moon's, whose globe is all light towards the sun, when it is all dark towards the world; such is the excellency of her nature, and of his estate. Attend, you beadsman of the muses, you take your pleasure in a wilderness of variety; but it is but of shadows. You are as a man rich in pictures, medals, and crystals. Your mind is of the water, which taketh all forms and impressions, but is weak of substance. Will you compare shadows with bodies, picture with
with life, variety of many beauties with the peerless excellency of one? the element of water with the element of fire? And such is the comparison between knowledge and love.

Come out, Man of war; you must be ever in noise. You will give laws, and advance force, and trouble nations, and remove land-marks of kingdoms, and hunt men, and pen tragedies in blood: and that, which is worst of all, make all the virtues accessory to bloodshed. Hath the practice of force so deprived you of the use of reason, as that you will compare the interruption of society with the perfection of society? the conquest of bodies with the conquest of spirits? the terrestrial fire, which destroyeth and dissolveth, with the celestial fire, which quickeneth and giveth life? And such is the comparison between the soldier and the lover.

And as for you, untrue Politique, but truest bondman to Philautia, you, that presume to bind occasion, and to overwork fortune, I would ask you but one question. Did ever any lady, hard to please, or disposed to exercise her lover, injoin him so good tasks and commandments, as Philautia exacteth of you? While your life is nothing but a continual acting upon a stage; and that your mind must serve your humour, and yet your outward person must serve your end; so as you carry in one person two several servitudes to contrary masters. But I will leave you to the scorn of that mistress, whom you undertake to govern; that is, to fortune, to whom Philautia hath bound you. And yet, you commissioner of Philautia, I will proceed one degree farther: if I allowed both of your assurance, and of your values, as you have set them, may not my master enjoy his own felicity; and have all yours for advantage? I do not mean, that he should divide himself in both pursuits, as in your feigning tales towards the conclusion you did yield him; but because
all these are in the hands of his mistress more fully to bestow, than they can be attained by your addresses, knowledge, fame, fortune. For the muses, they are tributary to her Majesty for the great liberties they have enjoyed in her kingdom, during her most flourishing reign; in thankfulness whereof, they have adorned and accomplished her Majesty with the gifts of all the sisters. What library can present such a story of great actions, as her Majesty carrieth in her royal breast by the often return of this happy day? What worthy author, or favourite of the muses, is not familiar with her? Or what language, wherein the muses have used to speak, is unknown to her? Therefore, the hearing of her, the observing of her, the receiving instructions from her, may be to Erophiilus a lecture exceeding all dead monuments of the muses. For Fame, can all the exploits of the war win him such a title, as to have the name of favoured and selected servant of such a Queen? For Fortune, can any insolent politique promise to himself such a fortune, by making his own way, as the excellency of her nature cannot deny to a careful, obsequious, and dutiful servant? And if he could, were it equal honour to obtain it by a shop of cunning, as by the gift of such a hand?

Therefore Erophiilus's resolution is fixed: he renounceoth Phialutia, and all her enchantments. For her recreation, he will confer with his muse: for her defence and honour, he will sacrifice his life in the wars, hoping to be embalmed in the sweet odours of her remembrance. To her service will he consecrate all his watchful endeavours, and will ever bear in his heart the picture of her beauty; in his actions, of her will; and in his fortune, of her grace and favour.
To Sir Thomas Egerton, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal (g).

It may please your Lordship,

I am to make humble complaint to your Lordship of some hard dealing offered me by one Symphony, a goldsmith, a man noted much, as I have heard, for extremities and stoutness upon his purse: but yet I could scarcely have imagined, he would have dealt either so dishonestly towards myself, or so contemptuously towards her Majesty's service. For this Lombard (pardon me, I most humbly pray your Lordship, if being admonished by the street he dwells in, I give him that name) having me in bond for 300l. principal, and I having the last term confessed the action, and by his full and direct consent, repaid the satisfaction till the beginning of this term to come, without ever giving me warning, either by letter or message, served an execution upon me, having trained me at such time, as I came from the Tower, where, Mr. Waad can witness, we attended a service of no mean importance (b). Neither would he

(g) From the original in the Hatfield Collection of State Papers, communicated to me by the Rev. William Murdin, B.D. and intended by him for the public in a third volume of the collection of those papers, if his death had not prevented him from executing his design.

(b) It is not easy to determine what this service was; but it seems to relate to the examination of some prisoner; perhaps Edward Squire, executed in November, 1598, for poisoning the Queen's saddle; or Valentine Thomas, who accused the King of Scots of practices against Queen Elizabeth [Historical View, p. 178.] or one Stanley; concerning whom I shall insert here passages from two MS. letters of John Chamberlain, Esq; to his friend, Dudley Carleton, Esq; afterwards ambassador to Venice, the United Provinces, and France; these letters being part of a very large collection, from 1598 to 1625, which I transcribed from the originals. "One Stanley, says Mr. Cham-
he so much as vouchsafe to come and speak with me to take any order in it, though I sent for him divers times, and his house was just by; handling it as upon a despite, being a man I never provoked with a cross word, no nor with many delays. He would have urged it to have had me in prison; which he had done, had not Sheriff More, to whom I sent, gently recommended me to an handsome house in Coleman-street, where I am. Now because he will not treat with me, I am inforced humbly to desire your Lordship to send for him, according to your place, to bring him to some reason; and this forthwith, because I continue here to my farther discredit and inconvenience, and the trouble of the gentleman, with whom I am. I have an hundred pounds lying by me, which he may have, and the rest upon some reasonable time and security; or, if need be, the whole; but with my more trouble. As for the contempt he hath offered, in regard her Majesty's

"berlaim, in his letter dated at London, 3 October, 1598, that came in sixteen days over land with letters out of Spain, is lately committed to the Tower. He was very earnest to have private conference with her Majesty, pretending matter of great importance, which he would by no means utter to any body else." In another letter, dated 20 November, 1598, Mr. Chamberlain observes, that on the day, that they looked for Stanley's arraignment, he came not himself, but sent his forerunner, one Squire, that had been an under-purveyor of the stable, who being in Spain was dealt withall by one Wallpole, a Jesuit, to poison the Queen and the Earl of Essex; and accordingly came prepared into England, and went with the Earl in his own ship the last journey, and poisoned the arms or handler of the chair he used to sit in, with a confection he had received of the Jesuit; as likewise he had done the pum- mel of the Queen's saddle not past five days before his going to sea. But because nothing succeeded of it, the priest thinking he had either changed his purpose, or betrayed it, gave Stanley instructions to accuse him; thereby to get him more credit, and to be revenged of Squire for breaking pro- mise. The fellow confessed the whole practice, and, as it seemed, died very penitent."
service, to my understanding, carrieth a privilege eundo et redeundo in meaner causes, much more in matters of this nature, especially in persons known to be qualified with that place and employment, which, though unworthy, I am vouchsafed, I inform nothing, thinking I have done my part, when I have made it known; and so leave it to your Lordship's honourable consideration. And so with signification of my humble duty, &c.

To Sir Robert Cecil, Secretary of State (i).

It may please your Honour,

I Humbly pray you to understand how badly I have been used by the inclosed, being a copy of a letter of complaint thereof, which I have written to the Lord Keeper. How sensitive you are of wrongs offered to your blood in my particular, I have had not long since experience. But herein I think your Honour will be doubly sensitive, in tenderness also of the indignity to her Majesty's service. For as for me, Mr. Sympson might have had me every day in London; and therefore to delay me, while he knew I came from the Tower about her Majesty's special service, was to my understanding very bold. And two days before he brags he forbore me, because I dined with Sheriff More. So as with Mr. Sympson, examinations at the Tower are not so great a privilege, eundo et redeundo, as Sheriff More's dinner. But this complaint I make in duty; and to that end have also informed my Lord of Essex thereof; for otherwise his punishment will do me no good.

(i) From the Hatfield Collection. So
So with signification of my humble duty, I commend your Honour to the divine preservation.

From Coleman-street, this 24th of September [1598.]

At your honourable command particularly,

Fr. Bacon.

The Substance of a Letter I. (k) now with your Lordship (l) should write to her Majesty.

THAT you desire her Majesty to believe id, quod res ipsa logitur; that it is not conscience to yourself of any advantage her Majesty hath towards you, otherwise than the general and infinite advantage of a queen and a mistress; nor any drift or device to win her Majesty to any point or particular, that moveth you to send her these lines of your own mind. But first, and principally, gratitude; next a natural desire of, you will not say, the tedious remembrance, for you can hold nothing tedious, that hath been derived from her Majesty; but the troubled and pensive remembrance of that, which is past, of enjoying better times with her Majesty, such as others have had, and that you have wanted. You cannot impute the difference to the continuance of time, which addeth nothing to her Majesty but increase of virtue; but rather to your own misfortune or errors. Whereas nevertheless, if it were only question of your own inducements, though any strength never so good may be oppressed, yet you think you should have suffocated them, as you had often done, to the impairing of your health, and weighing down of your mind. But that, which indeed toucheth the quick, is that, whereas you accounted it the choice fruit of yourself

(k) Francis Bacon. (l) Robert Earl of Essex.
to be a contentment and entertainment to her Majesty's mind, you found many times to the contrary, that you were rather a disquiet to her, and a distaste.

Again, whereas in the course of her service, though you confess the weakness of your own judgement, yet true zeal, not mired with any mercenary nor glorious respect, made you light sometimes upon the best and soundest counsels; you had reason to fear, that the distaste particular against yourself made her Majesty farther off from accepting any of them from such a hand. So as you seemed, to your deep discomfort, to trouble her Majesty's mind, and to foil her business; inconveniences, which, if you be minded as you ought, thankfulness should teach you to redeem, with stepping down, nay throwing yourself down, from your own fortune. In which intricate case, finding no end of this former course, and therefore desirous to find the beginning of a new, you have not whither to resort, but unto the oracle of her Majesty's direction. For though the true introduction ad tempora meliora be by an amnestia of that, which is past, except it be in the sense, that the verse speaketh, Olim bae meminisse juvabit, when tempests past are remembered in the calm; and that you do not doubt of her Majesty's goodness in pardoning and obliterating any of your errors and mistakings heretofore; refreshing the memory and contemplations of your poor services, or any thing that hath been grateful to her Majesty from you; yea, and somewhat of your sufferings; so though that be, yet you may be to seek for the time to come. For as you have determined your hope in a good hour, not willingly to offend her Majesty, either in matter of court or state, but to depend absolutely upon her will and pleasure; so you do more doubt and mistrust your wit and infight in finding her Majesty's mind, than your conformities and submission in obeying it; the rather, because you cannot but nourish a doubt
in your breast, that her Majesty, as princes hearts are
inscrutable, hath many times towards you aliud in ore,
et aliud in corde. So that you, that take her secundum
literam, go many times farther out of your way.

Therefore your most humble suit to her Majesty
is, that she will vouchsafe you that approach to her
heart, and bolom, et ad scrinium pectoris, plainly, for
as much as concerneth yourself, to open and expound
her mind towards you, suffer ing you to see clear what
may have bred any dislike in her Majesty; and in
what points she would have you reform yourself; and
how she would be served by you. Which done, you
do assure her Majesty, she shall be both at the begin-
ning and the ending of all, that you do, of that re-
gard, as you may presume to impart to her Ma-
je sty.

And so that hoping, that this may be an occasion
of some farther serenity from her Majesty towards you,
you refer the rest to your actions, which may verify
what you have written, as that you have written may
interpret your actions, and the course you shall here-
after take.

Indorsed by Mr. Francis Bacon,

A letter framed for my Lord of Essex to the Queen.

To Mr. Secretary Cecil (m).

It may please your Honour,

BECAUSE we live in an age, where every man's
imperfections is but another's fable; and that
there fell out an accident in the Exchequer, which I
know not how, nor how soon, may be traduced, though
I dare trust rumour in it, except it be malicious, or
extreme partial; I am bold now to profess your

(m) From the Hatfield Collection.
Honour, as one, that ever I found careful of my advancement, and yet more jealous of my wrongs, with the truth of that, which passed; deferring my farther request, untill I may attend your honour: and so I continue

Your Honour’s very humble

Gray’s-Inn, this
24th of April,
1601.

and particularly bounden,

FR. BACON.

A true remembrance of the abuse I received of Mr. Attorney General (n) publicly in the Exchequer the first day of term; for the truth whereof I refer myself to all that were present.

I moved to have a rescizure of the lands of Geo. Moore, a relapsed reculant, a fugitive, and a practising traytor; and shewed better matter for the Queen against the discharge by plea, which is ever with a salvo jure. And this I did in as gentle and reasonable terms as might be.

Mr. Attorney kindled at it, and said, “Mr. Bacon, if you have any tooth against me, pluck it out; for it will do you more hurt, than all the teeth in your head will do you good.” I answered coldly in these very words: “Mr. Attorney, I respect you: I fear you not: and the less you speak of your own greatness, the more I will think of it.”

He replied, “I think scorn to stand upon terms of greatness towards you, who are less than little; less than the least,” and other such strange light terms he gave me, with that insulting, which cannot be expressed.

(n) Edward Coke, knighted by King James at Greenwich in 1603; and made Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, 30 June, 1606.
Lord Chancellor BACON.

Herewith stirred, yet I said no more but this: 
"Mr. Attorney, do not depress me so far; for I have been your better, and may be again, when it please the Queen."

With this he spake, neither I nor himself could tell what, as if he had been born Attorney General; and in the end bade me not meddle with the Queen's business, but with mine own; and that I was unsworn, &c. I told him, sworn or unsworn was all one to an honest man; and that I ever let my service first, and myself second; and wish'd to God, that he would do the like.

Then he said, it were good to clap a cap. utelgatum upon my back! To which I only said he could not; and that he was at a fault; for he hunted upon an old scent.

He gave me a number of disgracefull words besides; which I answered with silence, and shewing, that I was not moved with them.

To ROBERT, Lord CECIL (o).

It may please your good Lordship,

THEY say late thanks are ever best. But the reason was, I thought to have seen your Lordship ere this. Howsoever I shall never forget this your last favour amongst others; and it grieveth me not a little, that I find myself of no use to such an honourable and kind friend.

For that matter, I think, I shall desire your assistance for the punishment of the contempt; not that I would use the privilege in future time, but because I would not have the dignity of the King's service prejudiced in my instance. But herein I will be ruled by your Lordship.

(o) From the Hatfield Collection.
It is fit likewise, though much against my mind, that I let your Lordship know, that I shall not be able to pay the money within the time by your Lordship undertaken, which was a fortnight. Nay money I find so hard to come by at this time, as I thought to have become an humble suitor to your Honour to have sustained me with your credit for the present from urgent debts with taking up 300l. till I can put away some land. But I am so forward with some sales, as this request, I hope, I may forbear.

For my estate (because your Honour hath care of it) it is thus: I shall be able with selling the skirts of my living in Hertfordshire (p) to preserve the body; and to leave myself, being clearly out of debt, and having some money in my pocket, 300l. land per annum, with a fair house, and the ground well timbered. This is now my labour.

For my purpose or course, I desire to meddle, as little as I can, in the King's causes, his Majesty now abounding in council; and to follow my private thrift and practice, and to marry with some convenient advancement. For as for any ambition, I do assure your Honour, mine is quenched. In the Queen's, my excellent mistress's time, the quorum was small: her service was a kind of freehold, and it was a more solemn time. All those points agreed with my nature and judgement. My ambition now I shall only put upon my pen, whereby I shall be able to maintain memory and merit of the times succeeding.

Lastly, for this divulged and almost prostituted title of knighthood, I could without charge, by your Honour's mean, be content to have it, both because of this late disgrace, and because I have three new knights in my mews in Gray's Inn commons; and because I have found out an alderman's daughter (q), an

(p) Gorhambury.
(q) Probably the lady, whom he afterwards married, Alice,
an handsome maiden, to my liking. So as if your Honour will find the time, I will come to the court from Gorhambury upon any warning.

How my fates go forward, your Lordship shall in a few days hear. Mean while, if you will not be pleased to take farther day with this lewd fellow, I hope your Lordship will not suffer him to take any part of the penalty, but principal, interest, and costs.

So I remain your Lordship's most bounden,

3 July, 1603.  
Fr. Bacon.

To the same.

It may please your good Lordship,

In answer of your last letter, your money shall be ready before your day, principal, interest, and costs of suit. So the sheriff promised, when I released errors; and a Jew takes no more. The rest cannot be forgotten; for I cannot forget your Lordship's dum memor ipse mei: and if there have been aliquid nimir, it shall be amended. And, to be plain with your Lordship, that will quicken me now, which slackened me before. Then I thought you might have had more use of me, than now, I suppose, you are like to have. Not but I think the impediment will be rather in my mind, than in the matter or times. But to do you service, I will come out of my religion at any time.

For my knighthood (r), I wish the manner might be such, as might grace me, since the matter will

one of the daughters and coheirs of Benedict Barnham, Esq; alderman of London. She surviv'd her husband above twenty years. Life of Lord Bacon, by Dr. William Rawley.

(r) He was knighted at Whitehall, 23 July, 1603.
LETTERS, &c. of
not: I mean, that I might not be merely gregarious in a troop. The coronation (s) is at hand. It may please your Lordship to let me hear from you speedily. So I continue

Your Lordship's

From Gorhambury, this 16th of July, 1603.

ever much bounden,

FR. BACON.

To ISAAC CASAUBON (t).

C UM ex literis, quas ad Dominum Carew misisti, cognosceam icripta mea à te probari, et mihi de judicio tuo gratulatus sum, et tibi, quam ea res mihi fuerit voluptati, scribendum exstlimavi. Atque illud etiam de me recte auguraris, me sciantias ex latebris in lucem extrahere vehementer cupere. Neque enim multum interest ea per otium scribi, quae per otium legantur; sed plane vitam, et res humanas, et medias earum turbas, per contemplationes fanas et veras instructiores esse volo. Quanta autem in hoc genere aggregiari, et quam parvis præfidiis, postmodum forte affipe rescellae. Etiam tu pariter gratissimum mihi facies, si quae in animo habes atque moliris et agitas, mihi nota esse velis. Nam conjunctionem animorum et studiorum plus facere ad amicitias judico, quam civiles necessitates et occasionem officia. Equidem existimo neminem unquam magis verè potuisse dicere de se, quam me ipsum, illud quod habet psalmus, multum incola fuit anima

(t) It was solemnified, 24 July, 1603.
(t) This letter appears to have been written after Sir George Carew, mention’d in it, return’d from his embassy in France, in October, 1609; and before the arrival of Casaubon in England, in Octob. 1610.
mea. Itaque magis videor cum antiquis verfari, quam cum his, quibuscum vivo. Quid ni etiam possim cum absentibus potius verfari, quam cum iis, qui præsto sunt; et magis eleclione in amicitiis uti, quam occasione de more submitti? Verum ad institutionem revertor ego; si quâ in re amicitia mea tibi aut tuis usui aut ornatamento esse posset, tibi operam meam bonam atque navam polliceor. Itaque salutem tibi dicit

Amicus tuus, &c.

Indors’d, To Casaubon.

The beginning of a letter immediately after my Lord Treasurer’s (u) decease (w).

May 29, 1612.

It may please your Majesty,

If I shall seem in these few lines to write majora quam pro fortuna, it may please your Majesty to take it to be an effect, not of presumption, but of affection. For of the one I was never noted; and for the other I could never shew it hitherto to the full; being as a hawk tied to another’s fist, that might sometimes bait and proffer, but could never fly. And therefore if, as it was said to one, that spoke great words, Anjice, verba tua desiderant civitatem, to your Majesty say to me, “Bacon, your words require a place to speak them;” I must answer, that place, or not place, is in your Majesty to add or refrain: and though I never grow eager but to *****, yet your Majesty——

(u) Robert Earl of Salisbury, who died 24 May, 1612.

(w) The draught of this imperfect letter is written chiefly in Greek characters.

(x) These words of Themistocles, are cited likewise by Lord Bacon at the end of his book De Augmentis Scientiarum.
To the King, immediately after the Lord Treasurer's death.

31 May, 1612.

It may please your excellent Majesty,

I Cannot but endeavour to merit, considering your preventing graces, which is the occasion of these few lines.

Your Majesty hath lost a great subject and a great servant. But, if I should praise him in propriety, I should say, that he was a fit man to keep things from growing worse; but no very fit man to reduce things to be much better. For he loved to have the eyes of all Israel a little too much on himself, and to have all business still under the hammer; and, like clay in the hands of the potter, to mould it as he thought good; so that he was more in operation than in opere. And though he had fine passages of action, yet the real conclusions came slowly on. So that although your Majesty hath grave counsellors and worthy persons left; yet you do, as it were, turn a leaf, wherein if your Majesty shall give a frame and constitution to matters, before you place the persons, in my simple opinion it were not amiss. But the great matter, and most instant for the present, is the consideration of a parliament, for two effects: the one, for the supply of your estate; the other, for the better knitting of the hearts of your subjects unto your Majesty, according to your infinite merit; for both which, parliaments have been, and are, the ancient and honourable remedy.

Now because I take myself to have a little skill in that region, as one, that ever affected, that your Majesty might, in all your causes, not only prevail, but prevail with satisfaction of the inner man; and though no man can say but I was a perfect and peremptory
tory royalist, yet every man makes me believe, that I was never one hour out of credit with the lower house: my desire is to know, whether your Majesty will give me leave to meditate and propound unto you some preparative remembrances, touching the future parliament.

Your Majesty may truly perceive, that, though I cannot challenge to myself either invention, or judgement, or elocution, or method, or any of those powers; yet my offering is care and observance: and, as my good old mistress was wont to call me her watch-candle, because it pleased her to say, I did continually burn (and yet she suffered me to wait almost to nothing;) so I must much more owe the like duty to your Majesty, by whom my fortunes have been settled and raised. And so craving pardon, I rest,

Your Majesty’s most humble servant devote,

F. B.

To the King.

It may please your excellent Majesty,

My principal end being to do your Majesty service, I crave leave to make at this time to your Majesty this most humble oblation of myself. I may truly say with the psalm, Multum incola fuit anima mea; for my life hath been conversant in things, wherein I take little pleasure. Your Majesty may have heard somewhat, that my father was an honest man; and somewhat yet I may have been of myself, though not to make any true judgement by, because I have hitherto had only potestatem verborum, nor that neither. I was three of my young years bred with an
an ambassador (y) in France, and since I have been
an old truant in the school-house of your council-
chamber, though on the second form; yet longer than
any, that now fitteth, hath been in the head form.
If your Majesty find any aptness in me, or if you find
any scarcity in others, whereby, you may think it fit
for your service to remove me to business of state,
although I have a fair way before me for profit, and,
by your Majesty’s grace and favour, for honour and ad-
vancement, and in a course less exposed to the blast of
fortune; yet now that he (z) is gone, quod viventé
virtutibus certissimum exitium, I will be ready as a
cheffman to be wherever your Majesty’s royal hand
shall set me. Your Majesty will bear me witness,
I have not suddenly opened myself thus far. I have
looked on upon others. I see the exceptions; I see
the distractions; and I fear Tacitus will be a prophet,
magis alii homines, quam alii mores. I know mine
own heart; and I know not, whether God, that hath
touched my heart with the affection, may not touch
your royal heart to discern it. Howsoever, I shall go
on honestly in mine ordinary course, and supply the
rest in prayers for you, remaining, &c.

To the King (a).

*** Lastly, I will make two prayers unto your
Majesty, as I used to do to God Almighty, when I
commend to him his own glory and cause; so I will
pray to your Majesty for yourself.
The one is, that these cogitations of want do not
any ways trouble or vex your mind. I remember,

(y) Sir Amias Poulet, who was sent ambassador to France, in
September, 1575. He was succeeded by Sir Edward Stafford;
in December, 1578.
(-- Lord Treasurer Salisbury.
(a) The beginning of this letter is wanting.
Moses faith of the land of promise, that it was not like the land of Egypt, that was watered with a river, but was watered with showers from heaven; whereby I gather, God preferreth sometimes uncertainties before certainties, because they teach a more immediate dependance upon his providence. Sure I am, *nil novi accidit vobis.* It is for no new thing for the greatest Kings to be in debt: and, if a man shall *parvis componere magna,* I have seen an Earl of Leicester, a Chancellor Hatton, an Earl of Essex, and an Earl of Salisbury in debt; and yet was it no manner of diminution to their power or greatness.

My second prayer is, that your Majesty, in respect of the hafty freeing of your state, would not descend to any means, or degree of means, which carrieth not a symmetry with your majesty and greatness. He is gone, from whom those courses did wholly flow. So have your wants and necessities in particular, as it were, hanged up in two tablets before the eyes of your Lords and Commons to be talked of for four months together: to have all your courses to help your self in revenue or profit put into printed books, which were wont to be held *arcana imperii:* to have such worms of aldermen to lend for ten in the hundred upon good assurance, and with such ***, as if it should save the bark of your fortune: to contract still where might be had the readiest payment, and not the best bargain: to stir a number of projects for your profit, and then to blast them, and leave your Majesty nothing but the scandal of them: to pretend an even carriage between your Majesty’s rights and the ease of the people, and to satisfy neither. These courses, and others the like, I hope, are gone with the deviser of them; which have turned your Majesty to ineftimable prejudice (*b*).

*I hope*

(*b*) It will be but justice to the memory of the Earl of Salisbury to remark, that this disadvantageous character of him by Sir
I hope your Majesty will pardon my liberty of writing. I know these things are majora quam pro fortuna: but they are minora quam pro studio et voluntate. I assure myself, your Majesty taketh not me for one of a busy nature; for my state being free from all difficulties, and I having such a large field for contemplations, as I have partly, and shall much more make manifest to your Majesty and the world, to occupy my thoughts, nothing could make me active, but love and affection. So praying my God to bless and favour your person and estate, &c.

To the King.

It may please your excellent Majesty,

I HAVE, with all possible diligence since your Majesty's progress, attended the service committed to the sub-commissioners, touching the repair and improvement of your Majesty's means: and this I have done, not only in meeting, and conference, and debate with the rest; but also by my several and private meditation and inquiry. So that, besides the joint account, which we shall give to the Lords, I hope I shall be able to give your Majesty somewhat ex proprio. For as no man loveth better consulere in commune than I do; neither am I of those fine ones, that use to keep back any thing, wherein Sir Francis Bacon seems to have been heightened by the prejudices of the latter against that able Minister, grounded upon some suspicions, that the Earl had not served him with so much zeal, as he might have expected from so near a relation, either in Queen Elizabeth's reign, or that of her successor. Nor is it any just imputation on his Lordship, that he began to decline in King James I's good opinion, when his Majesty's ill economy occasioned demands on the Lord Treasurer, which all his skill, in the business of the finances, could not answer, but which drew from him advices and remonstrances still extant, which that King, not being very ready to profit by, conceived some resentment against his old servant, and even retained it against his memory.
they think they may win credit apart, and so make the consultation almost inutil. So nevertheless, in cases, where matters shall fall in upon the bye, perhaps of no less worth than that, which is the proper subject of the consultation; or where I find things passed over too lightly, or in cases, where that, which I should advise, is of that nature, as I hold it not fit to be communicated to all those, with whom I am joined; these parts of business I put to my private account; not because I would be officious, (though I profess I would do works of supererogation, if I could) but in a true discretion and caution. And your Majesty had some taste in those notes, which I gave you for the wards, (which it pleased you to say were no tricks nor novelties, but true passages of business) that mine own particular remembrances and observations are not like to be unprofitable. Concerning which notes for the wards, though I might say, sic vos non vobis; yet let that pass.

I have also considered fully of that great proposition, which your Majesty commended to my care and study, touching the conversion of your revenue of land into a multiplied present revenue of rent: wherein, I say, I have considered of the means and course to be taken, of the assurance, of the rates, of the exceptions, and of the arguments for and against it. For though the project itself be as old as I can remember, and falleth under every man’s capacity; yet the dispute and manage of it asketh a great deal of consideration and judgement; projects being like Æsop’s tongues, the best meat and the worst, as they are chosen and handled. But surely, ubi deficiunt remedia ordinaria, recurrencendum est ad extraordinaria. Of this also I am ready to give your Majesty an account.

Generally upon this subject of the repair of your Majesty’s means, I beseech your Majesty to give me leave to make this judgement, that your Majesty’s
recovery must be by the medicines of the Galenists and Arabians, and not of the chemists or Paracelsians. For it will not be wrought by any one fine extract, or strong water; but by a skilful company of a number of ingredients, and those by just weight and proportion, and that of some simples, which perhaps of themselves, or in over-great quantity, were little better than poisons; but mixed, and broken, and in just quantity, are full of virtue. And secondly, that as your Majesty's growing behind-hand hath been work of time; so must likewise be your Majesty's coming forth and making even. Not but I wish it were by all good and fit means accelerated; but that I foresee, that if your Majesty shall propound to yourself to do it per saltum, it can hardly be without accidents of prejudice to your honour, safety, or profit.

Indorsed,

My letter to the King, touching his estate in general,

September 18th, 1612.

To the King.

May it please your Majesty,

According to your Highness's pleasure signified by my Lord Chamberlain (c), I have considered of the petition of certain baronets (d) made unto your Majesty for confirmation and extent,

(c) Thomas Howard, Earl of Suffolk.
(d) The order of baronets was created by patent of King James I, dated the 22d of May, 1611. The year following, a decree was made relating to their place and precedence, and four years after, viz. in 1616, another decree to the same purpose. See Selden's Titles of Honour, Part II. Ch. V. p. 821. Ch. XI. p. 906, and 910. 2d Edit. fol. 1631.
or explanation of certain points mentioned in their charter; and am of opinion, that first, whereas it is desired, that the baronets be declared a middle degree between baron and knight, I hold this to be reasonable as to their placing.

Secondly, where it is desired, that unto the words *degree or dignity of baron*, the word *honour* might be added; I know very well, that in the preface of the baronets patent it is mentioned, that all honours are derived from the king. I find also, that in the patent of the baronets, which are marshalled under the barons (except it be certain principals) the word *honour* is granted. I find also, that the word *dignity* is many times in law a superior word to the word *honour*, as being applied to the King himself, all capital indictments concluding *contra coronam et dignitatem nostram*. It is evident also, that the word *honour* and *honourable* are used in these times in common speech very promiscuously. Nevertheless, because the style of honour belongs chiefly to peers and counsellors, I am doubtful what opinion to give therein.

Thirdly, whereas it is believed, that if there be any question of precedence touching baronets, it may be ordered, that the same be decided by the commissioners marshal, I do not see but it may be granted them for avoiding disturbances.

Fourthly, for the precedence of baronets, I find no alteration or difficulty, except it be in this, that the daughters of baronets are desired to be declared to have precedence before the wives of knights eldest sons; which, because it is a degree hereditary, and that in all examples, the daughters in general have place next the eldest brothers wives, I hold convenient.

Lastly, whereas it is desired, that the apparent heirs males of the bodies of the baronets may be knighted during the life of their fathers; for that I have received from the Lord Chamberlain a signification,
Your Majesty's most humble, and
most bounden servant,

Fr. Bacon.

The Charge against Mr. Whitelocke (c).

My Lords,

The offence, wherewith Mr. Whitelocke is charged (for as to Sir Robert Mansell, I take it to my part only to be sorry for his error) is a contempt

(c) He had been committed, in May 1613, to the Fleet, for speaking too boldly against the marshall's court, and for giving his opinion to Sir Robert Mansell, Treasurer of the Navy, and Vice-Admiral, that the commissiон to the Earl of Nottingham, Lord High Admiral, for reviewing and reforming the disorders committed by the officers of the navy, was not according to law; though Mr. Whitelocke had given that opinion only in private to his client, and not under his hand. Sir Robert Mansell was also committed to the Marshalsea, for animating the Lord Admiral against the commissiон. [Sir Ralph Wood's Memorials of State, Vol. III. p. 460.] This Mr. Whitelocke was probably the same with James Whitelocke, who was born in London, 28 November 1572, educated at Merchant Taylor's school there, and St. John's College in Oxford, and studied law in the Middle Temple, of which he was summer reader in 1619. In the preceding year, 1618, he stood for the place of recorder of the city of London, but was not elected to it, Robert Heath, Esq; being chosen on the 10th of November, chiefly by the recommendation of the King, the city having been told, that they must choose none, whom his Majesty should refuse, as he did in particular
Lord Chancellor B A C O N.

tempt of an high nature, and resting upon two parts: on the one, a presumptuous and licentious cenfure and defying of his Majesty's prerogative in general; the other, a flander and traducement of one act or emanation hereof, containing a commission of survey and reformation of abuses in the office of the navy.

This offence is fit to be opened and set before your Lordships (as it hath been well begun,) both in the true state, and in the true weight of it. For as I desire, that the nature of the offence may appear in its true colours; so, on the other side, I desire, that the shadow of it may not darken or involve any thing, that is lawful, or agreeable with the just and reasonable liberty of the subject.

First, we must and do agree, that the asking, and taking, and giving of counsel in law is an essential part of justice; and to deny that, is to shut the gate of justice, which in the Hebrews commonwealth was therefore held in the gate, to shew all passage to justice must be open: and certainly counsel in law is one of the passages. But yet, for all that, this liberty is not infinite and without limits.

If a jesuited papist should come, and ask counsel (I put a case not altogether feigned) whether all the acts of parliament made in the time of Queen Elizabeth and King James are void or no; because there are no lawful bishops sitting in the upper house, and a parliament must consist of lords spiritual and temporal and commons; and a lawyer will set it under his hand, that they be all void, I will touch him for high treason upon this his counsel.

Ticular except to Mr. Whitelocke by name [MS. letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, November 14, 1618.] Mr. Whitelocke, however, was call'd to the degree of serjeant in Trinity Term 1620, knighted, made Chief Justice of Chester; and at last, on the 18th of October, 1624, one of the Justices of the King's Bench; in which post he died June 1632. He was father of Bulstrode Whitelocke, Esq; Commissioner of the Great Seal.
So, if a puritan preacher will ask counsel, whether he may style the King Defender of the Faith, because he receives not the discipline and presbytery; and the lawyer will tell him, it is no part of the King's style, it will go hard with such a lawyer.

Or if a tribunitious popular spirit will go and ask a lawyer, whether the oath and band of allegiance be to the kingdom and crown only, and not to the King (as was Hugh Spenfer's case,) and he deliver his opinion as Hugh Spenfer did; he will be in Hugh Spenfer's danger.

So as the privilege of giving counsel proveth not all opinions: and as some opinions given are traitorous; so are there others of a much inferior nature, which are contemptuous. And among thee I reckon Mr. Whitelocke's; for as for his loyalty and true heart to the King, God forbid I should doubt it.

Therefore let no man mistake so far, as to conceive, that any lawful and due liberty of the subject for asking counsel in law is called in question, when points of disloyalty or of contempt are restrained. Nay, we see it is the grace and favour of the King and his courts, that if the case be tender, and a wise lawyer in modesty and discretion refuseth to be of council (for you have lawyers sometimes too nice as well as too bold) they are then ruled and assigned to be of council. For certainly counsel is the blind man's guide; and sorry I am with all my heart, that in this case the blind did lead the blind.

For the offence, for which Mr. Whitelocke is charged, I hold it great, and to have, as I said at first, two parts; the one a censure, and (in as much as in him is) a circling, nay a clipping, of the King's prerogative in general: the other, a flander and depravation of the King's power and honour in this commission.

And for the first of these, I consider it again in three degrees: first, that he presumed to censure the
the King's prerogative at all. Secondly, that he runneth into the generality of it more than was pertinent to the present question. And lastly, that he hath erroneously, and falsely, and dangerously given opinion in derogation of it.

First, I make a great difference between the King's grants and ordinary commissions of justice, and the King's high commissions of regiment, or mixed with causes of state.

For the former, there is no doubt but they may be freely questioned and disputed (and any defect in matter or form stood upon,) though the King be many times the adverse party:

But for the latter fort, they are rather to be dealt with (if at all) by a modest, and humble intimation or remonstrance to his Majesty and his council, than by bravery of dispute or peremptory opposition.

Of this kind is that properly to be understood, which is said in Bracton, De chartis et faetis regis non debent aut possunt justitiarii aut privatis personae disputare, sed tuitius est, ut expectetur sententia regis.

And the King's courts themselves have been exceeding tender and sparing in it; so that there is in all our law, not three cases of it. And in that very case of 24 Ed. 3. afs. pl. s. which Mr. Whitelocke vouched, where, as it was a commission to arrest a man, and to carry him to prison, and to seize his goods without any form of justice or examination preceding; and that the Judges saw it was obtained by surreption: yet the Judges said they would keep it by them, and shew it to the King's council.

But Mr. Whitelocke did not advise his client to acquaint the King's council with it, but presumptuously giveth opinion, that it is void. Nay, not so much as a clause or passage of modesty, as that he submits his opinion to censure: that it is too great a matter for him to deal in; or this is my opinion, which is nothing, &c. But illotis manibus,
he takes it into his hands, and pronounceth of it, as a man would scarcely do of a warrant of a justice of peace, and speaks like a dictator, that this is law, and this is against law, &c. (f).

Robert Earl of Somerset to Sir Thomas Overbury (g). From a Copy among Lord Bacon's papers in the Lambeth library.

Sir,

I HAVE considered, that my answer to you, and what I have otherwise to say, will exceed the bounds of a letter; and now having not much

(f) Sir H. Wotton in a letter of his to Sir Edmund Bacon [Reliq. Wotton. p. 421. Edit. 3d] written about the beginning of June, 1613, mentions, that Sir Robert Mansell and Mr. Whitelocke were, on the Saturday before, called to a very honourable hearing in the Queen's presence-chamber at Whitehall, before the Lords of the Council, with intervention of the Lord Chief Justice Coke, the Lord Chief Baron Tanfield, and the Master of the Rolls; the Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, Fleming, being kept at home by some infirmity. There the Attorney and Solicitor first undertook Mr. Whitelocke, and the Recorder [Henry Montagu], as the King's Serjeant, Sir Robert Mansell, charging the one as a counsellor, the other as a questioner, in matters of the King's prerogative and sovereignty upon occasion of a commission intended for a research into the administration of the admiralty. "Whitelocke in his answer, adds Sir Henry Wotton, spake more confusedly than was expected from a lawyer; and the knight more temperately than was expected from a soldier. . . . Whitelocke ended his speech with an absolute confession of his own offence, and with a promise of employing himself hereafter in defence of the King's prerogative. . . . In this they generally agreed, both counsellors and judges, to represent the humiliation of both the prisoners to the King in lieu of innocence, and to intercede for his gracious pardon: which was done, and accordingly the next day they were enlarged upon a submission under writing."

(g) He was committed to the Tower on the 21st of April, 1613, and died there of poison on the 15th of September following.
time to use betwixt my waiting on the King, and
the removes we do make in this our little progress,
I thought fit to use the same man to you, whom I
have heretofore many times employed in the same
business. He has, besides an account and a better
description of me to give you, to make a repetition of
the former carriages of all this business, that you may
distinguish that, which he did by knowledge of mine
and direction, and betwixt that he did out of his
own discretion without my warrant. With all this
he has to renew to you a former desire of mine,
which was the ground-work of this, and the chief
erand of his coming to you, wherein I desire
your answer by him. I would not employ this gen-
tleman to you, if he were, as you conceive of him,
your unfriend, or an ill instrument betwixt us. So
owe him the testimony of one, that has spoken as
honestly, and given more praises of you, than any
man, that has spoken to me.
My haste at this time makes me to end sooner than
I expected: but the subject of my next sending shall
be to answer that part you give me in your love,
with a return of the same from

Your assured loving friend,

R. Somerset.

Indorsed, Lord Somerset's first letter.

To the King.

It may please your most excellent Majesty,

HAVING understood of the death of the Lord
Chief Justice (b), I do ground in all humble-

(b) Sir Thomas Fleming, who died about August 1613.
I think of any other but your poor servants, your Attorney (i), and your Solicitor (k), one of them, for that place. Else we shall be like Noah's dove, not knowing where to rest our feet. For the places of rest, after the extreme painful places, wherein we serve, have used to be either the Lord Chancellor's place, or the Mastership of the Rolls, or the places of the Chief Justices: whereof, for the first, I could be almost loth to live to see this worthy counsellor fail. The Mastership of the Rolls is blocked with a reversion (l). My Lord Coke is like to outlive us both. So as, if this turn fail, I for my part know not whither to look. I have served your Majesty above a prenticehood, full seven years and more, as your Solicitor, which is, I think, one of the painfulest places in your kingdom, specially as my employments have been; and God hath brought mine own years to fifty two, which I think is older than ever any Solicitor continued unpreferred. My suit is principally, that you would remove Mr. Attorney to the place. If he refuse, then I hope your Majesty will seek no farther than myself, that I may at last, out of your Majesty's grace and favour, step forwards to a place either of more comfort or more ease. Besides, how necessary it is for your Majesty to strengthen your service amongst the Judges by a Chief Justice, which is sure to your prerogative, your Majesty knoweth. Therefore I ceased farther to trouble your Majesty, humbly craving pardon, and relying wholly upon

(i) Sir Henry Hobart, who was made Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, November 26, 1613, in the room of Sir Edward Coke, removed to the post of Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, October 25.

(k) Sir Francis Bacon himself, who was appointed Attorney General, October 27, 1613.

(l) to Sir Julius Cæsar.
Lord Chancellor B A C O N.

your goodness and remembrance, and resting in all true humbleness,

Your Majesty's most devoted,
and faithful subject and servant,

Fr. Bacon.

Reasons why it should be exceeding much for his Majesty's service to remove the Lord Coke from the place he now holdeth (m) to be Chief Justice of England (n), and the Attorney (o) to succeed him, and the Solicitor (p) the Attorney.

First, it will strengthen the King's causes greatly amongst the Judges: for both my Lord Coke will think himself near a Privy Counsellor's place, and thereupon turn obsequious; and the Attorney General, a new man, and a grave person, in a Judge's place, will come in well to the other, and hold him hard to it, not without emulation between them, who shall please the King best.

Secondly, the Attorney General forteth not so well with his present place, being a man timid and scrupulous both in parliament and other business, and one, that in a word was made fit for the late Lord Treasurer's bent, which was to do little with much formality and protestation: whereas the now Solicitor going more roundly to work, and being of a quicker and more earnest temper, and more effectual in that he dealeth in, is like to recover that

(m) of Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, having been appointed to that office June 30, 1606.
(o) He was advanced to that office October 25, 1613.
(p) Sir Henry Hobart, who had been appointed Attorney General July 4, 1606.
(p) Sir Francis Bacon, who had been sworn Solicitor General June 25, 1607.
strength to the King’s prerogative, which it hath had in times past, and which is due unto it. And for that purpose there must be brought in to be Sollicitor some man of courage and speech, and a grounded lawyer; which done, his Majesty will speedily find a marvellous change in his business. For it is not to purpose for the Judges to stand well-disposed, except the King’s council, which is the active and moving part, put the Judges well to it; for in a weapon, what is a back without an edge?

Thirdly, the King shall continue and add reputation to the Attorney’s and Sollicitor’s place, by this orderly advancement of them; which two places are the champions places for his rights and prerogative; and being stripped of their expectations and successions to great place, will wax vile; and then his Majesty’s prerogative goeth down the wind. Besides, the remove of my Lord Coke to a place of less profit (though it be with his will) yet will be thought abroad a kind of discipline to him for opposing himself in the King’s causes; the example whereof will contain others in more awe.

Lastly, whereas now it is voiced abroad touching the supply of places, as if it were a matter of labour and canvass, and money; and other persons are chiefly spoken of to be the men and the great suitors; this will appear to be the King’s own act, and is a course so natural and regular, as it is without all suspicion of these by-courses, to the King’s infinite honour. For men say now, the King can make good second Judges (as he hath done lately (q);) but that is no mastery, because men sue to be kept from these places. But now is the trial in those great places, how his Majesty can hold good, where there is great suit and means.

(q) Sir John Dodderidge was made a Judge of the King’s Bench, November 25, 1612, and Sir Augustin Nichols of the Common Pleas the day following.
To Mr. John Murray (r) of the Bed-chamber to the King (*).

Mr. Murray,

I keep the same measure in a proportion with my master and with my friend; which is, that I will never deceive them in any thing, which is in my power; and when my power faileth my will, I am sorry.

Monday is the day appointed for performing his Majesty's commandment. Till then I cannot tell what to advise you farther, except it should be this, that in case the Judges should refuse to take order in it themselves, then you must think of some warrant to Mr. Secretary, who is your friend, and constant in the business, that he see forth-with his Majesty's commandment executed, touching the double lock; and, if need be, repair to the place, and see by view the manner of keeping the seal; and take order, that there be no stay of working of the seal for justice, nor no prejudice to Killegrew's farm, nor to the duty of money paid to the Chief Justice. Whether this may require your presence, as you write, that yourself can best judge. But of this more, when we have received the Judges answer. It is my duty, as much as in me is, to procure my master to be obeyed. I ever rest,

Your friend and assured,

January 21,
1614.

Fr. Bacon.

I pray deliver the inclosed letter to his Majesty.

To his very good friend, Mr. John Murray, of his Majesty's Bed-chamber.

(r) He was created Viscount of Annan in Scotland, in August, 1622. Negotiations of Sir Thomas Roe, in his embassy to the Ottoman Porte, p. 93. In April, 1624, the Lord Annan was created Earl of Annandale in Scotland. Ibid. p. 250.

(*) This, and the three following letters, are printed from Harl. MSS. Vol. 6986.
Mr. Murray,

MY Lord Chancellor, yesterday in my presence, had before him the Judges of the Common Pleas, and hath performed his Majesty's royal command in a very worthy fashion, such as was fit for our master's greatness; and because the King may know it, I send you the inclosed. This seemeth to have wrought the effect desired; for presently I sent for Sir Richard Cox (s), and willed him to present himself to my Lord Hobart, and signify his readiness to attend. He came back to me, and told me, all things went on. I know not what afterwards may be; but I think this long chace is at an end.

I ever rest,

Your's assured,

January 25,
1614.

FR. BACON.

To Mr. Murray:

Mr. Murray,

I PRAY deliver the inclosed to his Majesty, and have care of the letter afterwards. I have written also to his Majesty about your reference to this purpose, that if you can get power over the whole title, it may be safe for his Majesty to assent, that you may try the right upon the deed. This is the farthest I can go.

I ever rest,

Your's assured,

February 28,
1614.

FR. BACON.

($) He was one of the Masters of the Green Cloth, and had had a quarrel at court during the Christmass holy-days of the year 1614, with Sir Thomas Erskine; which quarrel was made up by the Lords of the Marshal's Court, Sir Richard being obliged to put up with very foul words. MS. letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, January 12, 1614.
May it please your most excellent Majesty,

I SEND your Majesty inclosed a copy of our last examination of Peacham (t), taken the 10th of this present; whereby your Majesty may perceive, that

(t) Edmund Peacham, a minister in Somersetshire [MS. letter of Mr. Chamberlain, dated January 5, 1614]. I had one of both his names, who was instituted into the vicarage of Ridge in Hertfordshire July 22, 1581, and resigned it in 1587 [Newcourt, Reptor. Vol. I. p. 864.] Mr. Peacham was committed to the Tower for inverting several treasonable passages in a sermon never preached, nor, as Mr. Justice Croke remarks in his Reports during the reign of King Charles I. p. 125, ever intended to be preached. Mr. Chamberlain, in a letter of the 6th of February, 1614, to Sir Dudley Carleton, mentions Mr. Peacham's having been "stretched already, though he be an old man, and, they say, much above threescore: but they could "wring nothing out of him more than they had at first in his "papers. Yet the King is extremely incensed against him, "and will have him prosecuted to the uttermost." In another letter, dated February 23, we are informed, that the King, since his coming to London on the 15th, had had "the opinion "of the Judges severally in Peacham's case; and it is said, that "most of them concur to find it treason; yet my Lord Chief "Justice [Coke] is for the contrary; and if the Lord Hobart, "that rides the western circuit, can be drawn to jump with his "colleague, the Chief Baron [Tanfield] it is thought he shall "be sent down to be tried, and trussed up in Somersetshire." In a letter of the 2d of March, 1614, Mr. Chamberlain writes, "'Peacham's trial at the western assizes is put off, and his journey "layed, though Sir Randall Crew, the King's Serjeant, and "Sir Henry Yelverton, the Solicitor, were ready to go to horse "to have waited on him there." 'Peacham, the minister, "adds he in a letter of the 13th of July, 1614, that hath been "this twelve month in the Tower, is sent down to be tried for "treason in Somersetshire before the Lord Chief Baron and Sir "Henry Montagu, the Recorder. The Lord Hobart gave "over that circuit the last assizes. Sir Randall Crew and Sir "Henry Yelverton, the King's Serjeant and Solicitor, are sent "down
that this miscreant wretch goeth back from all, and
denieth his hand and all. No doubt, being fully of
belief, that he should go presently down to his trial,
he meant now to repeat his part, which he purposed
to play in the country, which was to deny all. But
your Majesty in your wisdom perceiveth, that this
denial of his hand, being not possible to be coun-
terfeited, and to be sworn by Adams, and so oft by
himself formerly confessed and admitted, could not
mend his case before any jury in the world, but ra-
ther aggravateth it by his notorious impudence and
falseness, and will make him more odious. He never
deceived me; for when others had hopes of discovery,
and thought time well spent that way, I told your Ma-
jefty, *pereuntibus mille figūræ*; and that he now did
but turn himself into divers shapes, to save or delay
his punishment. And therefore submitting myself
to your Majesty's high wisdom, I think myself bound
in conscience to put your Majesty in remembrance,
whether Sir John Sydenham (u) shall be detained
upon this man’s impeaching, in whom there is no
truth. Notwithstanding, that farther inquiry be
made of this other Peacham, and that information

“down to prosecute the trial.” The event of this trial, which
was on the 7th of August, appears from Mr. Chamberlain’s
letter of the 14th of that month, wherein, it is said, that “se-
ven knights were taken from the bench, and appointed to be
of the jury. He defended himself very simply, but obsti-
nately and doggedly enough. But his offence was so foul
and scandalous, that he was condemned of high treason;
yet not hitherto executed, nor perhaps shall be, if he have
the grace to submit himself, and shew some remorse.” He
died, as appears from another letter of the 27th of March, 1616,
in the jail at Taunton, where he was said to have “left behind
a most wicked and desperate writing, worse than that he was
convicted for.”

(u) He had been confronted about the end of February, or be-
inning of March, 1614, with Mr. Peacham, about certain
speeches, which had formerly passed between them. MS. letter
of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, from London,
March 2, 1614.
and light be taken from Mr. Poulet (w) and his servants, I hold it, as things are, necessary. God preserve your Majesty.

Your Majesty's most humble and devoted subject and servant,

March 12, 1614.

FR. BACON.

Supplement of two passages omitted in the edition of Sir Francis Bacon's speech in the King's Bench against Owen (x), as printed in his works. After the words [it is bottomless] in the paragraph beginning [For the treason itself, which is the second point, &c.] add

[I said in the beginning, that this treason in the nature of it was old. It is not of the treasons, whereof it may be said, from the beginning it was not so. You are indicted, Owen, not upon any statute made against the Pope's supremacy, or other matters, that have reference to religion; but merely upon that

(w) John Poulet, Esq; Knight of the Shire for the county of Somerset in the parliament, which met April 5, 1614. He was created Lord Poulet of Henton St. George, June 23, 1627.

(x) He was of the family of that name at Godstow in Oxfordshire [Camdeni Annales Regis Jacobi I, p. 12.] He was a young man, who had been in Spain; and was condemned at the King's Bench, on Wednesday May 17, 1615, "for divers most vile and traitorous speeches confessed and subscribed with his own hand; as, among others, that it was as lawful for any man to kill a King excommunicated, as for the hangman to execute a condemned person. He could say little for himself, or in maintenance of his desperate positions, but only that he meant it not by the King, and he holds him not excommunicate." MS. letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton from London, May 20, 1615.
the law, which was born with the kingdom, and was law even in superstitious times, when the Pope was received. The compassing and imagining of the King's death was treason. The statute of the 25th of Edward III, which was but declaratory, begins with this article, as the capital of capitals in treason, and of all others the most odious and the most perilous.] And so the civil law, &c.

At the conclusion of this speech, after the words [the Duke of Anjou and the Papists] add

[As for subjects, I see not, or ever could discern, that by infallible consequence, it is the case of all subjects and people, as well as of Kings; for it is all one reason, that a Bishop, upon an excommunication of a private man, may give his lands and goods in spoil, or cause him to be slaughtered, as for the Pope to do it towards a King; and for a Bishop to absolve the son from duty to the father, as for the Pope to absolve the subject from his allegiance to his King. And this is not my inference, but the very affirmative of Pope Urban the Second, who in a brief to Godfrey, Bishop of Luca, hath these very words, which Cardinal Baronius reciteth in his Annals, Tom. XI. p. 802. Nonillos homicidas arbitramur, qui adversus excommunicatos zelo catholieae matris ardentes eorum quoslibet truncidare contigerit, speaking generally of all excommunications.]

To Mr. Murray (*).

Good Mr. Murray,

According to his Majesty's pleasure by you signified unto me, we have attended my Lord Chancellor (y), my Lord Treasurer (z), and Mr.

(z) Thomas Howard, Earl of Suffolk.  

Chancellor
Chancellor of the Exchequer (a), concerning Sir Gilbert Houghton's patent stayed at the seal; and we have acquainted them with the grounds and state of the suit, to justify them, that it was just and beneficial to his Majesty. And for any thing we could perceive by any objection or reply they made, we left them in good opinion of the same, with this, that because my Lord Chancellor (by the advice, as it seemeth, of the other two) had acquainted the council-table (for so many as were then present) with that suit amongst others, they thought fit to stay till his Majesty's coming to town, being at hand, to understand his farther pleasure. We purpose, upon his Majesty's coming, to attend his Majesty, to give him a more particular account of this busines, and some other. Mean while, finding his Majesty to have care of the matter, we thought it our duty to return this answer to you in discharge of his Majesty's direction. We remain,

Your assured friends,

July 6, 1615.

Francis Bacon,
Henry Yelverton.

To the King (*).

It may please your excellent Majesty,

I RECEIVED this very day, in the forenoon, your Majesty's several directions touching your cause prosecuted by my Lord Hunsdon (b), as your farmer. Your first direction was by Sir Christopher Parkins, that the day appointed for the judicial sen-

(a) Sir Fulke Grevile, advanced to that post October 1, 1614, in the room of Sir Julius Cæsar, made Master of the Rolls.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 6, 86.

(b) John Carey, Baron of Hunsdon. He died in April, 1617.
tence should hold: and if my Lord Chief Justice, upon my repair to him, should let me know, that he could not be present, then my Lord Chancellor should proceed, calling to him my Lord Hobart, except he should be excepted to; and then some other Judge by consent. For the latter part of this your direction, I suppose, there would have been no difficulty in admitting my Lord Hobart; for after he had assisted at so many hearings, it would have been too late except to him. But then your Majesty's second and later direction (which was delivered unto me from the Earl of Arundel, as by word of mouth, but so as he had set down a remembrance thereof in writing freshly after the signification of his pleasure) was to this effect, that before any proceeding in the Chancery, there should be a conference had between my Lord Chancellor, my Lord Chief Justice, and myself, how your Majesty's interest might be secured. This later direction I acquainted my Lord Chancellor with; and finding an impossibility, that this conference should be had before to-morrow, my Lord thought good, that the day be put over, taking no occasion thereof other than this, that in a cause of so great weight it was fit for him to confer with his assistants, before he gave any decree, or final order. After such time as I have conferred with my Lords, according to your commandment, I will give your Majesty account with speed of the conclusion of that conference.

Farther, I think fit to let your Majesty know, that in my opinion I hold it a fit time to proceed in the business of the Rege inconfulto, which is appointed for Monday. I did think these greater causes would have come to period or pause sooner: but now they are in the hight, and to have so great a matter as this of the Rege inconfulto handled, when men do aliud agere, I think it no proper time. Besides, your Majesty in your great wisdom knoweth, that this business
business of Mr. Murray’s is somewhat against the stream of the Judges inclination: and it is no part of a skilful mariner to fail on against a tide, when the tide is at strongest. If your Majesty be pleased to write to my Lord Coke, that you would have the business of the Rege inconfulto receive a hearing, when he should be animo sedato et libero, and not in the midst of his affidious and incessant cares and industries in other practices, I think your Majesty shall do your service right. Howsoever, I will be provided against the day.

Thus praying God for your happy preservation, whereof God giveth you so many great pledges;

I rest your Majesty’s most humble and devoted subject and servant,

November 17, 1615. Fr. Bacon.

Innovations introduced into the laws and government (c).

1. The ecclesiastical commission. In this he prevailed, and the commission was pared, and namely the point of alimony left out, whereby wives are left wholly to the tyranny of their husbands. This point, and some others, may require a review, and is fit to be restored to the commission.

(c) This paper was evidently designed against the Lord Chief Justice Coke.
In this he prevailed in such fort, as the presidents are continually suitors for the enlargement of the instructions, sometimes in one point, sometimes in another; and the jurisdictions grow into contempt, and more would, if the Lord Chancellor did not strengthen them by injunctions, where they exceed not their instructions.

In this he was over-ruled by the sentence of the court; but he bent all his strength and wits to have prevailed; and so did the other Judges by long and laborious arguments: and if they had prevailed, the authority of the court had been overthrown. But the plurality of the court took more regard to their own precedents, than to the Judges opinion.

In this, he prevaleth, for prohibitions fly continually; and many times are cause of long suits, to the discontent of foreign ambassadors, and the King's dishonour and trouble by their remonstrances.

This is new, and would be forthwith restrained, and the others settled.
6. Against the Court of Requests.

7. Against the Chancery for decrees after judgment.

8. Praemunire for suits in the Chancery.

9. Disputed in the Common Pleas, whether that court may grant a prohibition to stay suits in the Chancery, and time given to search for precedents.

10. Against the new boroughs in Ireland.

11. Against the writs Dom. Rege incon-sulto.

In this he prevaleth; and this but lately brought in question.

In this his Majesty hath made an establishment: and he hath not prevailed, but made a great noise and trouble.

This his Majesty hath also established, being a strange attempt to make the Chancellor sit under a hatchet, instead of the King's arms.

This was but a bravery, and dieth of itself, especially the authority of the Chancery by his Majesty's late proceedings being so well established.

This in good time was overruled by the voice of eight Judges of ten, after they had heard your Attorney. And had it prevailed, it had overthrown the parliament of Ireland, which would have been imputed to a fear in this state to have proceeded; and so his Majesty's authority and reputation lost in that kingdom.

This is yet sub judice: but if it should prevail, it maketh the Judges absolute over the patents of the King, be they of power and profit, contrary to
LETTERS, &c. of

to the antient, and ever con-
tinued law of the crown; which
doeth call those causes before
the King himself, as he is re-
presented in Chancery.

12. Against contri-
bution, that it was
gave opinion, that the King by
not lawful neither
his great seal could not so much
to levy it, nor to
as move any his subjects for
move for it.

benevolence. But this he re-
tracted after in the Star-cham-
ber; but it marred the bene-
volence in the mean time.

13. Peacham's case.

In this, for as much as in
him was, and in the court of
King's Bench, he prevailed,
though it was holpen by the
good service of others. But
the opinion, which he held,
amounted in effect to this, that
no word of scandal or defama-
tion, importing, that the King
was utterly unable or unwor-
thy to govern, were treason,
except they disabled his title,
&c.


In this we prevailed with
him to give opinion, it was
treason: but then it was upon
a conceit of his own, that was
no less dangerous, than if he
had given his opinion against
the King: for he proclaimed
the King excommunicate in
respect of the anniversary bulls
of Cena Domini, which was to
expose
15. The value of benefices not to be according to the tax in the King's book of taxes.

16. Suits for legacies ought to be in their proper dioceses, and not in the prerogative court; although the will be proved in the prerogative court upon bona notabilia in several dioceses, commendams, &c.

To Sir George Villiers.

Sir,

THE message, which I received from you by Mr. Shute, hath bred in me such belief and confidence, as I will now wholly rely upon your excellent and happy self. When persons of greatness and quality begin speech with me of the matter, and offer me their good offices, I can but answer them civilly. But those things are but toys: I am your's furer to you than to mine own life; for, as they speak of the Turquois stone in a ring, I will break into expose his person to the fury of any Jesuited conspirator.

By this the intent of the statute of 21 Henry VIII. is frustrated; for there is no benefice of so small an improved value as 8l. by that kind of rating. For this the Judges may be assembled in the Exchequer for a conference.

The practice hath gone against this; and it is fit, the suit be where the probate is. And this served but to put a pique between the archbishops courts and the bishops courts. This may be again propounded upon a conference of the Judges.
Letters, &c. of
into twenty pieces, before you have the least fall.
God keep you ever.

Your truest servant,

February 15, 1615,
Fr. Bacon.

My Lord Chancellor is prettily amended. I was
with him yesterday almost half an hour. He used
me with wonderful tokens of kindness. We both
wept, which I do not often.

Indorsed,
A letter to Sir G. Villiers touching a message brought to
him by Mr. Shute of a promise of the Chancellor's
place.

Mr. Tobie Matthew (d) to Sir Francis Bacon,
Attorney General.

May it please you, Sir,

The notice I have from my Lord Roos, Sir
Henry Goodere, and other friends, of the ex-
treme obligation, wherein I continue towards you,
together with the conscience I have of the knowledge,
how dearly and truly I honour and love you, and
daily pray, that you may rise to that height, which

(d) Son of Dr. Tobie Matthew, Archbishop of York. He
was born at Oxford in 1578, while his father was Dean of Christ-
church, and educated there. During his travels abroad, he was
seduced to the Romish religion by Father Parsons. This occa-
sioned his living out of his own country from the year 1607 to
1617, when he had leave to return to England. He was again
ordered to leave it in October 1618; but in 1622 was recalled to
affit in the match with Spain; and on account of his endeavours
to promote it, was knighted by King James I. at Royston, on
the 10th of October, 1623. He translated into Italian Sir
Francis Bacon's Essays, and died at Ghent in Flanders, Octob. 13,
1655, N. S.
the state, wherein you live, can give you, hath taken away the wings of fear, whereby I was almost carried away from daring to importune you in this kind. But I know how good you have always been, and are still, towards me; or rather because I am not able to comprehend how much it is, I will presume there is enough for any use, whereupon an honest humble servant may employ it.

It imports the business of my poor estate, that I be restored to my country for some time; and I have divers friends in that court, who will further my desire thereof, and particularly Mr. Secretary Lake and my Lord Roos, whom I have desired to confer with you about it. But nothing can be done therein, unless my Lord of Canterbury (e) may be made propitious, or at least not averse; nor do I know in the world how to charm him but by the music of your tongue. I beseech you, Sir, lose some minutes upon me, which I shall be glad to pay by whole years of service; and call to mind, if it please you, the last speech you made me, that if I should continue as I then was, and neither prove ill-affected to the state, nor become otherwise than a meer secular man in my religion, you would be pleased to negotiate for my return. On my part the conditions are performed; and it remains, that you do the like: nor can I doubt but that the nobleness of your nature, which loves nothing in the world so well as to be doing of good, can descend from being the Attorney General to a great King, to be solicitor for one of the meanest subjects that he hath.

I send my letter to my Lord's Grace open, that before you seal it (if you shall think fit to seal it, and rather not to deliver it open) you may see the reasons that I have; which, if I be not partial, are very pregnant. Although I confess, that till it was now very lately

(e) Dr. George Abbot.
motioned to me by some honourable friends, who have already procured to disimpression his Majesty of some hard conceit he had me in, I did not greatly think thereof; and now I am full of hope, that I shall prevail. For supposing, that my Lord of Canterbury's mind is but made of iron, the adamant of your persuasion will have power to draw it. It may please you either to send a present answer hereunto; or, since I am not worthy of so much favour, to tell either of those honourable persons aforesaid what the answer is, that accordingly they may co-operate.

This letter goes by Sir Edward Parham, a gentleman, whom I have been much beholding to. I know him to be a perfect honest man; and since, I protest, I had rather die than deceive you, I will humbly pray, that he may rather receive favor from you, than otherwise, when he shall come in your way, which at one time or other all the world there must do. And I shall acknowledge myself much bound to you, as being enabled by this means to pay many of my debts to him.

I presume to send you the copy of a piece of a letter, which Galileo, of whom, I am sure, you have heard, wrote to a monk of my acquaintance in Italy, about the answering of that place in Joshua, which concerns the Sun's standing still, and approving thereby the pretended falsehood of Copernicus's opinion. The letter was written by occasion of the opposition, which some few in Italy did make against Galileo, as if he went about to establish that by experiments, which appears to be contrary to Holy Scripture. But he makes it appear the while by this piece of a letter, which I send you, that if that passage of Scripture doth expressly favour either side, it is for the affirmative of Copernicus's opinion, and for the negative of Aristotle's. To an Attorney General in the midst of a town, and such a one, as is employed in the weightiest affairs of the kingdom, it might seem
seem unseasonable for me to interrupt you with matter of this nature. But I know well enough in how high account you have the truth of things; and that no day can pass, wherein you give not liberty to your wife thoughts of looking upon the works of nature. It may please you to pardon the so much trouble, which I give you in this kind; though yet, I confess, I do not deserve a pardon, because I find not in myself a purpose of forbearing to do the like hereafter. I most humbly kiss your hand.

Your most faithful and affectionate servant,
Brussels, this 21st
of April, 1616.

Tobie Matthew.

Questions legal for the Judges [in the Case of the Earl
and Countefs of Somerset.]

Whether the ax is to be carried before the prisoner, being in the case of felony?

Whether, if the Lady make any digression to clear his Lordship, she is not by the Lord Steward to be interrupted and silenced?

Whether, if my Lord of Somerset should break forth into any speech of taxing the King, he be not presently by the Lord Steward to be interrupted and silenced; and, if he persist, he be not to be told, that if he take that course, he is to be withdrawn, and evidence to be given in his absence? And whether that may be; and what else to be done?

Whether if there should be twelve votes to condemn, and twelve or thirteen to acquit, it be not a verdict for the King?

Questions of Convenience, whereupon his Majesty may confer with some of his Council.

Whether, if Somerset confesses at any time before his trial, his Majesty shall stay trial in respect of farther examination concerning practice of treason, as
the death of the late Prince, the conveying into Spain of the now Prince, or the like; for till he confesses the les crime, there is [no] likelihood of confessing the greater?

Whether, if the trial upon that reason shall be put off, it shall be discharged privately by dissolving the commission, or discharging the summons? Or whether it shall not be done in open court, the peers being met, and the solemnity and celebrity preserved; and that with some declaration of the cause of putting off the farther proceeding?

Whether the days of her trial and his shall be immediate, as it is now appointed; or a day between, to see, if, after condemnation, the Lady will confess of this Lord; which done, there is no doubt but he will confess of himself?

Whether his trial shall not be set first, and hers after, because then any conceit, which may be wrought by her clearing of him, may be prevented; and it may be he will be in the better temper, hoping of his own clearing, and of her respiting?

What shall be the days; for Thursday and Friday can hardly hold in respect of the summons; and it may be as well Friday and Saturday, or Monday and Tuesday, as London makes it already?

A particular remembrance for his Majesty.

If it were good, that after he is come into the Hall, so that he may perceive he must go to trial, and shall be retired into the place appointed, till the court call for him, then the Lieutenant should tell him roundly, that if in his speeches he shall tax the King (f), that the justice of England is, that he shall

(f) The King's apprehension of being taxed by the Earl of Somerset on his trial, though for what is not known, accounts
be taken away, and the evidence shall go on without him; and then all the people will cry away with him; and then it shall not be in the King’s will to save his life, the people will be so set on fire.

Indorsed,

Memorial touching the course to be had in my Lord of Somerset’s arraignment.

The heads of the charge against Robert Earl of Somerset.

Apostyle of the King.

First it is meant, that Somerset shall not be charged with any thing by way of aggravation, otherwise than as conduceth to the proof of the impoisonment.

in some measure for his Majesty’s extreme uneasiness of mind till that trial was over, and for the management used by Sir Francis Bacon in particular, as appears from his letters, to prevail upon the Earl to submit to be tried, and to keep him in temper during his trial, left be, as the King expressed it in an apostille on Sir Francis’s letter of the 28th of April, 1616, upon the one part commit unpardonable errors, and I on the other seem to punish him in the spirit of revenge. See more on this subject in Mr. Mallet’s Life of the Lord Chancellor Bacon, who closes his remarks with a reference to a letter of Somerset to the King, printed in the Cabala, and written in an high style of expostulation, and swaying, through the affected obscurity of some expressions, that there was an important secret in his keeping, of which his Majesty dreaded a discovery. The Earl and his Lady were releas’d from their confinement in the Tower in January 1621, the latter dying August 23, 1632, leaving one daughter Anne, then sixteen years of age, afterwards married to William Lord Russell, afterwards Earl, and as last Duke of Bedford. The Earl of Somerset surviv’d his Lady several years, and died in July 1645, being interr’d on the 17th of that month in the church of St. Paul’s, Covent-Garden.
The proofs themselves, they are distributed into four:

The first to prove the malice, which Somerset bore to Overbury, which was the motive and ground of the impoisonment.

The second is to prove the preparations unto the impoisonment, by plotting his imprisonment, placing his keepers, stopping access of friends, &c.

The third is the acts of the impoisonments themselves.

And the fourth is acts subsequent, which do vehemently argue him to be guilty of the impoisonment.

For the first two heads, upon conference, whereunto I called Serjeant Montagu and Serjeant Crew, I have taken them two heads to myself; the third I have allotted to Serjeant Montagu; and the fourth to Serjeant Crew.

In the first of these, to my understanding, is the only tenderness: for, on the one side, it is most necessary to lay a foundation, that the malice was a deep malice, mixed with fear, and not only matter of revenge upon his Lordship's quarrel: for periculum periculo vincitur; and the malice must have a proportion to the effect of it, which was the impoisonment: so that if this foundation be not laid, all the evidence is weakened.

On the other side, if I charge him, or could charge him, by way of aggravation, with matters tending to disloyalty or treason, then he is like to grow desperate.

Therefore
Therefore I shall now set down perspicuously what course I mean to hold, that your Majesty may be pleased to direct and correct it, preserving the strength of the evidence: and this I shall now do, but shortly, and without ornament.

First, I shall read some passages of Overbury's letters, namely these: "Is this the fruit of nine years love, common secrets, and common dangers?" In another letter, "Do not drive me to extremity to do that, which you and I shall be sorry for?" In another letter; "Can you forget him, between whom such secrets of all kinds have passed? &c."

Then will I produce Simcock, who deposeth from Weston's speech, that Somerset told Weston, that, if ever Overbury came out of prison, one of them must die for it.

Then will I say what these secrets were. I mean not to enter into particulars, nor to charge him with disloyalty, because he stands to be tried for his life upon another crime. But yet by some taste, that I shall give to the peers in general, they may conceive of what nature those secrets may be. Wherein I will take it for a thing notorious, that Overbury was a man, that always carried himself insolently, both towards the Queen, and towards the late Prince: that he was a man, that carried Somerset on in courses separate and opposite to the privy-council: that he was a man of nature fit to be an incendiary of a state, full of bitterness and wildness of speech and project: that he was thought also lately to govern Somerset, insomuch that in his own letters he vaunted, 'that from him proceeded Somerset's fortune, credit, and understanding.'

This course I mean to run in a kind of generality, putting the imputations rather upon Overbury than Somerset; and applying it, that such a nature was like to hatch dangerous secrets and practices. I mean to shew likewise what jargons there were and F cyphers
cyphers between them, which are great badges of secrets of estate, and used either by princes and their ministers of state, or by such, as practice against Princes. That your Majesty was called Julius, in respect of your empire; the Queen Agrippina (though Somerset now faith it was Livia, and that my Lady of Suffolk was Agrippina;) the Bishop of Canterbury Uritius; Northampton, Dominic; Suffolk, first Lerma, after Wolsey; and many others: so as it appears they made a play both of your court and kingdom; and that their imaginations wrought upon the greatest men and matters.

Neither will I omit Somerset’s breach of trust to your Majesty, in trusting Overbury with all the dispatches, things, wherewith your council of estate itself was not many times privy or acquainted: and yet this man must be admitted to them, not cursorily, or by glimpses, but to have them by him, to copy them, to register them, to table them, &c.

Apostyle of the King.

This evidence cannot be given in without making me his accuser, and that upon a very slight ground. As for all the subsequent evidences, they are all so little evident, as una litura may serve thaine all.

I shall also give in evidence, in this place, the slight account of that letter, which was brought to Somerset by Ashton, being found in the fields soon after the late Prince’s death, and was directed to Antwerp, containing these words, that “the first branch was cut from the tree; and that he should, ere long, send happier and joyfuller news.”

Which is a matter I would not use, but that my Lord Coke, who hath filled this part with many frivolous things, would think all lost, except he hear somewhat
Nothing to Somerset, and declared by Franklin after condemnation.

Nothing to Somerset, and a loose conjecture.

No better than a gazette, or passage of Gallo Belgicus.

Nothing yet proved against Lowbell.

Nothing to Somerset.

Declared by Franklin after condemnation.

Nothing to Somerset.

somewhat of this kind. But this it is to come to the leavings of a business.

And for the rest of that kind, as to speak of that particular, that Mrs. Turner did at Whitehall shew to Franklin the man, who, as she said, poisoned the Prince, which, he says, was a physician with a red beard.

That there was a little picture of a young man in white wax, left by Mrs. Turner with Forman the conjurer, which my Lord Coke doubted was the Prince.

That the Vice-Roy of the Indies at Goa reported to an English factor, that Prince Henry came to an untimely death by a mistress of his.

That Somerset, with others, would have preferred Lowbell, the apothecary, to Prince Charles.

That the Countess laboured Forman and Gresham, the conjurers, to enforce the Queen by witchcraft to favour the Countess.

That the Countess told Franklin, that when the Queen died, Somerset should have Somerset-house.

That Northampton said, the Prince, if ever he came to reign, would prove a tyrant.
Nothing to Somer-
set.

That Franklin was moved by the Countess to go to the Palsgrave, and should be fur-
nished with money.

The particular reasons, why I omit them, I have set in the margin; but the general is partly to do a kind of right to justice, and such a solemn trial, in not giving that in evidence, which touches not the delinquent, or is not of weight; and partly to observe your Majesty's direction, to give Somerset no just occasion of despair, or flushes.

But I pray your Majesty to pardon me, that I have troubled your Majesty with repeating them, left you should hear hereafter, that Mr. Attorney hath omitted divers material parts of the evidence.

Indorsed,
Somerset's business and charge, with his Majesty's postiles.

To Sir George Villiers.

Sir,

Your man made good haste; for he was with me yesterdai about ten of the clock the forenoon. Since I held him.

The reason, why I set so small a distance of time between the use of the little charm, or, as his Majesty better terms it, the evangile (g), and the day of his trial (b), notwithstanding his Majesty's being so far off, as advertisement of success and order thereupon could not go and come between, was chiefly, for that his Majesty, from whom the overture of that

(g) Cicero, Epist. ad Atticum, Lib. XIII. Ep. 40. uses this word, ἵσσηνία; which signifies both good news, and the reward given to him, who brings good news. See Lib. II. Epist. 3.

(b) The Earl of Somerset's.
first moved, did write but of a few hours, that this should be done, which I turned into days. Secondly, because the hope I had of effect by that mean, was rather of attempting him at his arraignment, than of confession before his arraignment. But I submit it to his Majesty's better judgement.

The person, by your first description, which was without name, I thought had been meant of Packer (i): but now I perceive it is another, to me unknown, but, as it seemeth, very fit. I doubt not but he came with sufficient warrant to Mr. Lieutenant to have access. In this I have no more to do, but to expect to hear from his Majesty how this worketh.

The letter from his Majesty to myself and the Serjeants I have received, such as I wished; and I will speak with the commissioners, that he may, by the Lieutenant, understand his Majesty's care of him, and the tokens herein of his Majesty's compassion towards him.

I ever had a purpose to make use of that circumstance, that Overbury, the person murdered, was his Majesty's prisoner in the Tower; which indeed is a strong pressure of his Majesty's justice. For Overbury is the first prisoner murdered in the Tower, since the murder of the young Princes by Richard the Third, the tyrant.

I would not trouble his Majesty with any points of preamble, nor of the evidence itself, more than that part nakedly, wherein was the tenderness, in which I am glad his Majesty, by his postils, which he returned to me, approveth my judgement.

Now I am warranted, I will not stick to say openly, I am commanded, not to exasperate, nor to aggravate the matter in question of the impoisionment with any other collateral charge of disloyalty, or

(i) John, of whom there are several letters in Winwood's Memorials, Vol. II.
otherwise; wherein, besides his Majesty's principal intention, there will be some use to save the former bruits of Spanifh matters (k).

There is a direction given to Mr. Lieutenant by my Lord Chancellor and myself, that as yesterday Mr. Whiting (l), the preacher, a discreet man, and one that was used to Helwisse, should preach before the Lady (m), and teach her, and move her generally to a clear confession. That after the same preacher should speak as much to him at his going away in private; and so proof to be made, whether this good mean, and the last night's thoughts, will produce any thing. And that this day the Lieutenant should declare to her the time of her trial, and likewise of his trial, and persuade her, not only upon Christian duty, but as good for them both, that the deal clearly touching him, whereof no use can be made, nor need to be made, for evidence, but much use may be made for their comfort.

It is thought, at the day of her trial the Lady will confess the indictment; which if she do, no evidence ought to be given. But because it shall not be a dumb shew, and for his Majesty's honour in so solemn an assembly, I purpose to make a declaration of the proceedings of this great work of justice, from the beginning to the end, wherein, nevertheless, I

(k) Secretary Winwood, in a private letter to Sir Thomas Edmond, dated March 26, 1616, mentions, that there was great expectation, that Sir John Digby, just then returned from Spain, where he had been Ambassador, could charge the Earl of Somer-£et with some treasons and plots with Spain. Historical View of the Negotiations between the Courts of England, France, and Brussells, p. 392.

(l) John Whiting, D. D. Rector of St. Martin Vintry, in London, and Vicar of East-Ham in Essex, Prebendary of Eald-street in the church of St. Paul's, and Chaplain to King James I. He attended Sir Gervase Helwisse, who had been Lieutenant of the Tower, at his execution upon Tower-Hill, on Monday the 30th of November, 1615, for the murder of Sir Thomas Over-bury.

(m) Frances, Countess of Somerset, will
will be careful no ways to prevent or discover the
evidence of the next day.

In this my Lord Chancellor and I have likewise
used a point of providence: for I did forecaft, that
if in that narrative, by the connection of things,
any thing should be spoken, that should shew him
guilty, she might break forth into passionate pro-
teftations for his clearing; which, though it may
be justly made light of, yet it is better avoided.
Therefore my Lord Chancellor and I have devifed,
that upon the entrance into that declaration she fhall,
in refpect of her weakness, and not to add farther
affliction, be withdrawn.

It is impossible, neither is it needful, for me, to
express all the particulars of my care in this buisness.
But I divide myself into all cogitations as far as I can
forefee; being very glad to find, that his Majesty
doeth not only accept well of my care and advices, but
that he applieth his directions fo fitly, as guideth me
from time to time.

I have received the commifions signed.
I am not forgetful of the goods and eftate of So-
erfet, as far as is fefonable to inquire at this time.
My Lord Coke taketh upon him to anfwer for the
jewels, being the chief part of his moveable value:
and this, I think, is done with his Majesty's privity.
But my Lord Coke is a good man to anfwer for it.

God ever preferve and prosper you. I ref,

Your true and devoted fervant,

May 10, Friday at 7
of the clock in the
morning [1616.]

Fr. Bacon.
The charge of the Attorney General, Sir Francis Bacon, against Frances, Countess of Somerset, intended to have been spoken by him at her arraignment, on Friday, May 24, 1616, in case she had pleaded not guilty (n).

It may please your Grace, my Lord High Steward of England (o), and you my Lords the Peers.

You have heard the indictment against this Lady well opened; and likewise the point in law, that might make some doubt, declared and solved; wherein certainly the policy of the law of England is much to be esteemed, which requireth and respecteth form in the indictment, and substance in the proof.

This scruple it may be hath moved this Lady to plead not guilty, though for the proof I shall not need much more than her own confession, which she hath formerly made, free and voluntary, and therein given glory to God and Justice. And certainly confession, as it is the strongest foundation of Justice, so it is a kind of corner-stone, whereupon Justice and Mercy may meet.

The proofs, which I shall read in the end for the ground of your verdict and sentence, will be very short; and, as much as may, serve to satisfy your honours and consciences for the conviction of this Lady, without wasting of time in a case clear and confessed; or ripping up guiltiness against one, that hath prostrated herself by confession; or preventing or deflowering too much of the evidence. And therefore the occasion itself doth admonish me to spend this day rather in declaration, than in evidence, giving God and the King the honour, and your Lordships and the hearers the contentment, to set before you

(n) She pleaded guilty, on which occasion the Attorney General spoke a charge somewhat different from this, printed in his works.
(o) Thomas Egerton, Viscount Ellesmere, Lord High Chancellor.
the proceeding of this excellent work of the King's justice, from the beginning to the end; and so to conclude with the reading the confessions and proofs.

My Lords, this is now the second time (p) within the space of thirteen years reign of our happy Sovereign, that this high tribunal-seat of Justice, ordained for the trial by peers, hath been opened and erected; and that, with a rare event, supplied and exercised by one and the same person; which is a great honour to you, my Lord Steward.

In all this mean time, the King hath reigned in his white robe, not sprinkled with any drop of blood of any of his nobles of this kingdom. Nay, such hath been the depths of his mercy, as even those noblemen's bloods, (against whom the proceeding was at Winchester,) Cobham and Grey, were attainted and corrupted, but not spilt or taken away; but that they remained rather spectacles of justice in their continual imprisonment, than monuments of justice in the memory of their sufferings.

It is true, that the objects of his justice then and now were very differing. For then, it was the revenge of an offence against his own person and crown, and upon persons, that were malcontents, and contraries to the state and government. But now, it is the revenge of the blood and death of a particular subject, and the cry of a prisoner. It is upon persons, that were highly in his favour; whereby his Majesty, to his great honour, hath shewed to the world (as if it were written in a sun-beam) that he is truly the Lieutenant of him, with whom there is no respect of persons; that his affections royal are above his affections private: that his favours and nearness about him are not like popish sanctuaries to privilege malefactors: and that his being the best master of the world doth not let him from being the best King of

(p) The first time was on the trials of the Lords Cobham and Grey, in November 1603.
the world. His people, on the other side, may say to themselves, *I will lie down in peace; for God and the King and the law protect me against great and small.* It may be a discipline also to great men, especially such, as are swollen in fortunes from small beginnings, that the King is as well able to level mountains, as to fill valleys, if such be their desert.

But to come to the present case; the great frame of justice, my Lords, in this present action, hath a vault, and it hath a stage: a vault, wherein these works of darkness were contrived; and a stage with steps, by which they were brought to light. And therefore I will bring this work of justice to the period of this day; and then go on with this day's work.

Sir Thomas Overbury was murtered by poison in the 15th of September, 1613, 11 Reg. This foul and cruel murther did, for a time, cry secretly in the ears of God; but God gave no answer to it, otherwise than by that voice, which sometimes he useth, which is *vox populi,* the speech of the people. For there went then a murmur, that Overbury was poisoned: and yet this same submiff and soft voice of God, the speech of the vulgar people, was not without a counter-tenor, or counter-blast of the devil (who is the common author both of murder and slander:) for it was given out, that Overbury was dead of a foul disease, and his body, which they had made a *corpus Judaicum* with their poifons, so as it had no whole part, must be laid to be leprofed with vice, and so his name poisoned as well as his body. For as to dissoluteness, I never heard the gentleman noted with it: his faults were insolency, and turbulency, and the like of that kind: the other part of the soul not the voluptuous.

Mean time, there was some industry used (of which I will not now speak) to lull asleep those, that were the revengers of blood; the father and the bro-
ther of the murdered. And in these terms things stood by the space almost of two years; during which time, God so blinded the two great procurers, and dazzled them with their own greatness, and bind and nail fast the actors and instruments, with security upon their protection, as neither the one looked about them, nor the other stirred or fled, nor were conveyed away; but remained here still, as under a privy arrest of God’s judgments; insomuch as Franklin, that should have been sent over to the Palsgrave with good store of money, was, by God’s providence, and the accident of a marriage of his, diverted and stayed.

But about the beginning of the progress last summer, God’s judgments began to come out of their depths: and as the revealing of murtherters is commonly such, as a man may say, a Domino boc factum est; it is God’s work, and it is marvellous in our eyes: so in this particular it was most admirable; for it came forth by a compliment and matter of courtesy.

My Lord of Shrewsbury (q), that is now with God, recommended to a counsellor, of state of especial trust by his place, the late Lieutenant Helwiste (r),

(q) Gilbert, Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of the Garter, who died May 8, 1616.

(r) Sir Gervase Helwistle, appointed Lieutenant of the Tower, upon the removal of Sir William Waad on the 6th of May, 1613. [Reliquiae Wottonianae, p. 412, 3d Edit. 1672.] Mr. Chamberlain, in a MS. letter to Sir Dudley Carleton, dated at London, May 13, 1613, speaks of Sir Gervafe’s promotion in these terms. “One “Sir Gervafe Helwistle of Lincolnshire, somewhat an unknown “man, is put into the place [of Sir W. Waad’s] by the favour “of the Lord Chamberlain [Earl of Somerset] and his Lady. “The gentleman is of too mild and gentle a disposition for such “an office. He is my old friend and acquaintance in France, “and lately renewed in town, where he hath lived past a year, “nor followed the court many a day.” Sir Henry Wotton, in a letter of the fourteenth of May, 1613, [ubi supra, p. 13.] says, that Sir Gervafe had been before one of the Pensioners.
only for acquaintance as an honest worthy gentleman; and desired him to know him, and to be acquainted with him. That counsellor answered him civilly, that my Lord did him a favour; and that he should embrace it willingly: but he must let his Lordship know, that there did lie a heavy imputation upon that gentleman, Helwisse; for that Sir Thomas Overbury, his prisoner, was thought to have come to a violent and untimely death. When this speech was reported back by my Lord of Shrewsbury to Helwisse, *percutit illico animum*, he was stricken with it; and being a politic man, and of likelihood doubting, that the matter would break forth at one time or other, and that others might have the start of him, and thinking to make his own case by his own tale, resolved with himself, upon this occasion, to discover to my Lord of Shrewsbury and that counsellor, that there was an attempt, wherefore he was privy, to have poisoned Overbury by the hands of his under-keeper, Weston; but that he checked it, and put it by, and diffused it, and related so much to him indeed: but then he left it thus, that was but an attempt, or untimely birth, never executed; and, as if his own fault had been no more, but that he was honest in forbidding, but fearful of revealing and impeaching or accusing great persons; and so with this fine point thought to save himself.

But that great counsellor of state wisely considering, that by the Lieutenant's own tale it could not be simply a permission or weakness; for that Weston was never displaced by the Lieutenant, notwithstanding that attempt: and coupling the sequel by the beginning, thought it matter fit to be brought before his Majesty, by whose appointment Helwisse set down the like declaration in writing.

Upon this ground, the King playeth Solomon's part, *Gloria Dei celare rem*; *et Gloria Regis investigare rem*; and sets down certain papers of his own hand, which
which I might term to be \textit{claves justitiae}, keys of justice; and may serve for a precedent both for Princes to imitate, and for a direction for Judges to follow: and his Majesty carried the balance with a constant and steady hand, evenly and without prejudice, whether it were a true accusation of the one part, or a practice and factious device of the other: which writing, because I am not able to express according to the worth thereof, I will desire your Lordship anon to hear read.

This excellent foundation of justice being laid by his Majesty's own hand, it was referred unto some counsellors to examine farther, who gained some degrees of light from Westen, but yet left it imperfect.

After it was referred to Sir Edward Coke, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, as a person best practised in legal examinations, who took a great deal of indefatigable pains in it, without intermission, having, as I have heard him say, taken at least three hundred examinations in this business.

But these things were not done in a corner. I need not speak of them. It is true, that my Lord Chief Justice, in the dawning and opening of the light, finding that the matter touched upon these great persons, very discreetly became suitor to the King to have greater persons than his own rank joined with him. Whereupon, your Lordship, my Lord High Steward of England, to whom the King commonly reforteth \textit{in arduis}, and my Lord Steward of the King's house, and my Lord Zouch, were joined with him.

Neither wanted there this while practice to suppress testimony, to deface writings, to weaken the King's resolution, to slander the justice, and the like. Nay when it came to the first solemn act of justice, which was the arraignment of Westen, he had his lesson to stand mute; which had arrested the wheel of justice. But this dumb devil, by the means of some
some discreet divines, and the potent charm of justice, together, was cast out. Neither did this poisonous adder stop his ear to those charms, but relented, and yielded to his trial.

Then follow the proceedings of justice against the other offenders, Turner, Helvisle, Franklin.

But all these being but the organs and instruments of this fact, the actors and not the authors, justice could not have been crowned without this last act against these great persons. Else Welfton’s censure or prediction might have been verified, when he said, he hoped the small flies should not be caught, and the great escape. Wherein the King being in great straits, between the defacing of his honour and of his creature, hath, according as he ueth to do, chosen the better part, reserving always mercy to himself.

The time also of this justice hath had its true motions. The time until this Lady’s deliverance was due unto honour, Christianity, and humanity, in respect of her great belly. The time since was due to another kind of deliverance too; which was, that some causes of estate, that were in the womb, might likewise be brought forth, not for matter of justice, but for reason of state. Likewise this last procrastination of days had the like weighty grounds and causes. And this is the true and brief representation of this extreme work of the King’s justice.

Now for the evidence against this Lady, I am sorry I must rip it up. I shall first shew you the purveyance or provisions of the poisons; that they were seven in number brought to this Lady, and by her billeted and laid up till they might be used: and this done with an oath or vow of secrecy, which is like the Egyptian darkness, a gross and palpable darkness, that may be felt.

Secondly, I shall shew you the exhibiting and firing of this same number or volley of poisons: white arsenic
arsenic was fit for salt, because it is of like body and colour. The poison of great spiders, and of the venomous fly cantharides, was fit for pig's sauce, or partridge sauce, because it resembled pepper. As for mercury-water, and other poisons, they might be fit for tarts, which is a kind of hotch-pot, wherein no one colour is so proper: and some of these were delivered by the hands of this Lady, and some by her direction.

Thirdly, I shall prove and observe unto you, the cautions of these poisons; that they might not be too swift, lest the world should startle at it by the suddenness of the dispatch: but they must abide long in the body, and work by degrees: and for this purpose there must be essays of them upon poor beaits, &c.

And lastly, I shall shew you the rewards of this impoisonment, first demanded by Weston, and denied, because the deed was not done; but after the deed done and perpetrated, that Overbury was dead, then performed and paid to the value of 1801.

And so without farther aggravation of that, which in itself bears its own tragedy, I will conclude with the confessions of this Lady herself, which is the strongest support of justice; and yet is the foot-stool of mercy. For, as the Scripture says, Mercy and Truth have kissed each other; there is no meeting or greeting of mercy, till there be a confession, or trial of truth. For these read,

Franklin, November 16, Helwisse, October 2,
Franklin, November 17, The Countess's letter
Rich. Weston, October 1, without date,
Rich. Weston, October 2, The Countess's confession,
Will. Weston, October 2, January 8,
Rich. Weston, October 3,
Mr. Tobie Matthew to Sir Francis Bacon,
Attorney General.

May it please your Honour,

SUCH, as know your Honour, may congratulate with you the favour, which you have lately received from his Majesty, of being made a Counsellor of State (s): but as for me, I must have leave to congratulate with the council-table, in being so happy as to have you for an assessor. I hope these are but beginnings, and that the marriage, which now I perceive that Fortune is about to make with Virtue, will be consummate in your person. I cannot dissemble, though I am ashamed to mention, the excessive honour, which you have vouchsafed to do unto my picture. But shame ought not to be so hateful as sin; and without sin I know not how to conceal the extreme obligation, into which I am entered thereby, which is incomparably more than I can express, and no less than as much as I am able to conceive. And as the copy is more fortunate than the original, because it hath the honour to be under your eye; so the original being much more truly your's than the copy can be, aspires by having the happiness to see you, to put the picture out of countenance.

I understand by Sir George Petre (t), who is arrived here at the Spa, and is so wise as to honour you extremely, though he have not the fortune to be known to your Honour, that he had heard how my Lord of Canterbury had been moved in my behalf; and that he gave way unto my return. This,

(i) Sir Francis Bacon was sworn at Greenwich of the privy-council, June 9, 1616.
(ii) Grandson of John, the first Lord Petre, and son of William, second Baron of that name.
if it be true, cannot have happened without some
endeavour of your Honour; and therefore, howsoever
I have not been particularly advertized, that your
Honour had delivered my letter to his Grace; yet
now methinks I do as good as know it, and dare
adventure to present you with my humblest thanks
for the favour. But the main point is, how his Ma-
jecty should be moved; wherein my friends are straining courtey; and unless I have your Honour for a
master of the ceremonies, to take order, who shall
begin, all the benefit, that I can reap by this nego-
tiation, will be to have the reputation of little judg-
ment in attempting that, which I was not able to ob-
tain; and that howsoever I have shot fair, I know
not how to hit the mark. I have been directed by
my Lord Roos, who was the first mover of this
stone, to write a letter, which himself would deliver
to the Master of the Horse (u), who doth me the
honour to wish me very well: and I have obeyed his
Lordship, and beseech your Honour, that you will
be pleased to prevent, or to accompany, or second it
with your commendation, left otherwise the many
words, that I have used, have but the virtue of a
single o, or cypher. But indeed, if I had not been
over-weighed by the authority of my Lord Roos’s
commandment, I should rather have reserved the
Master of the Horse’s favour to some other use after-
ward. In conformity whereof, I have also written
to his Lordship; and perhaps he will thereupon for-
bear to deliver my letter to the Master of the Horse:
whereas, I should be the less sorry, if your Honour’s
self would not think it inconvenient to make the suit
of my return to his Majesty; in which case I should,
to my extreme contentment, have all my obligations
to your Honour only.

(u) Sir George Villiers, who was appointed to that office,
January 4, 1615.
His Majesty's being now in progress will give some impediment to my suit, unless either it be my good fortune, that your Honour do attend his person; or else that you will be pleased to command some one of the many servants your Honour hath in court, to procure the expedition of my cause; wherein I can foresee no difficulty, when I consider the interest, which your Honour alloweth me in your favour, and my innocent carriage abroad for so many years; whereunto all his Majesty's ministers, who have known me, I am sure, will give an attestation, according to the contents of my letter to his Grace of Canterbury.

If I durst, I would most humbly intreat your Honour to be pleased, that some servant of your's may speedily advertise me, whether or no his Grace of Canterbury hath received my letter; what his answer was; and what I may hope in this my suit. I remember, that the last words, which I had the honour to hear from your mouth, were, that if I continued any time, free both from disloyalty and priesthood, your Honour would be pleased to make yourself the intercessor for my return. Any letter sent to Mr. Trumball for me will come safely and speedily to my hands.

The term doth now last with your Honour all the year long; and therefore the sooner I make an end, the better service I shall do you. I presume to kiss your hands, and continue

Your Honour's most intirely, and humbly ever at commandment,

Spa, this 16th of July, a anno 1610.

Tobie Matthew.

Postsc.
It may please your Honour,

I PRESUMED to importune your Honour with a letter of the 16th of this month, whereby I signified, how I had written to the Master of the Horse, that he would be pleased to move his Majesty for my return into England; and how that I had done it upon the direction of my Lord Roos, who offered to be the deliverer thereof. Withal I told your Honour, that I expressed thereby an act rather of obedience, than prudence, as not holding his Lordship a fit man, whom, by presenting that letter, the King might peradventure discover to be my favourer in this business. In regard whereof I besought him, that, howsoever I had complied with his command in writing, yet he would forbear the delivery: and I gave him divers reasons for it. And both in contemplation of those reasons, as also of the hazard of miscarriage, that letters do run into between these parts and those, I have now thought fit to send your Honour this enclosed, accompanied with a most humble intreaty, that you will be pleased to put it into the Master of the Horse's hands, with such a recommendation as you can give. Having read it, your Honour may be pleased to seal it; and if his Honour have received the former by other hands, this may serve in the nature of a duplicate or copy: if not, it may be the original. And indeed, though it should be but the copy,
copy, if it may be touched by your Honour, it
would have both greater grace and greater life, than
the principal itself; and therefore, howsoever, I hum-
ibly pray, that this may be delivered.

If my business should be remitted to the council-
table (which yet, I hope, will not be) I am most
a stranger to my Lord Chancellor and my Lord
Chamberlain (w), of whom yet I trust, by means of
your Honour's good word in my behalf, that I shall
receive no impediment.

The bearer, Mr. Becher (x), can say what my car-
riage hath been in France, under the eye of several
Ambassadors; which makes me the more glad to use
him in the delivery of this letter to your Honour:
and if your Honour may be pleased to command me
any thing, he will convey it to my knowledge.

I hear, to my unspeakable joy of heart, how much
power you have with the Master of the Horse; and
how much immediate favour you have also with his
most excellent Majesty: so that I cannot but hope
for all good success, when I consider withal the pro-
tection, whereinto you have been pleased to take
me, the

Most humble and most obliged of

Spa, this last of July, stylo novo,
1616.

TOBIE MATTHEW.

(w) William, Earl of Pembroke.
(x) William, afterwards knighted. He had been secretary
to Sir George Calvert, Ambassador to the court of France, and
was afterwards agent at that court; and at last made Clerk of
the Council.
May it please your Honour,

I HAVE been made happy by your Honour's noble and dear lines of the two and twentieth of July: and the joy, that I took therein, was only kept from excess by the notice they gave me of some intentions and advices of your Honour, which you have been pleased to impart to others of my friends, with a meaning, that they should acquaint me with them; whereof they have intirely failed. And therefore, if still it should import me to understand what they were, I must be inforced to beg the knowledge of them from yourself. Your Honour hath, by this short letter, delivered me otherwise from a great deal of laborious suspense. For, besides the great hope you give me of being so shortly able to do you reverence, I am come to know, that by the diligence of your favour towards me, my Lord of Canterbury hath been drawn to give way, and the Master of the Horse hath been induced to move. That motion, I trust, will be granted howsoever; but I should be out of fear thereof, if, when he moves the King, your Honour would cast to be present; that if his Majesty should make any difficulty, some such reply, as is wont to come from you in such cases, may have power to discharge it.

I have been told rather confidently, than credibly (for in truth I am hardly drawn to believe it) that Sir Henry Goodere should under hand (upon the reason of certain accounts, that run between him and me, wherein I might justly lose my right, if I had so little wit, as to trouble your Honour's infinite business, by a particular relation thereof,) oppose himself to my return; and perform ill offices in conformity of
that unkind affection, which he is said to bear me. But, as I said, I cannot absolutely believe it, though yet I could not so far despise the information, as not to acquaint your Honour with what I heard. I offer it not as a ruled case, but only as a query, as I have also done to Mr. Secretary Lake, in this letter, which I humbly pray your Honour may be given him, together with your best advice, how my business is to be carried in this juncture of his Majesty's drawing near to London, at which time I shall receive my sentence. I have learned from your Honour to be confident, that it will be pronounced in my favour: but, if the will of God should be otherwise, I shall yet frame for myself a good proportion of contentment; since, howsoever I was so unfortunate, as that I might not enjoy my country, yet withal, I was so happy, as that my return thither was desired and negotiated by the affection, which such a person as yourself vouchsafed to bear me. When his Majesty shall be moved, if he chance to make difficulty about my return, and offer to impose any condition, which, it is known, I cannot draw myself to digest; I desire it may be remembered, that my case is common with many of his subjects, who breath in the air of their country, and that my case is not common with many, since I have lived so long abroad with disgrace at home; and yet have ever been free, not only from suspicion of practice, but from the least dependence upon foreign Princes. My King is wise; and I hope, that he hath this just mercy in store for me. God Almighty make and keep your Honour ever happy, and keep me so in his favour, as I will be sure to continue

Your Honour's ever most obliged,

Antwerp, this 1st of Sept. 1616.

and devoted servant,

Tobie Matthew.

Post-
POSTSCRIPT.

May it please your Honour,

I have written to Sir John Digby; and I think
he would do me all favour, if he were handomely
put upon it. My Lady of Pembroke (y) hath writ-
ten, and that very earnestly, to my Lord Chamber-
lain in my behalf.

This letter goes by Mr. Robert Garret, to whom
I am many ways beholden, for making me the best
present, that ever I received, by delivering me your
honour's last letter.

Sir Francis Bacon to the King.

May it please your excellent Majesty,

Because I have ever found, that in business
the consideration of persons, who are instrumenta
animata, is no less weighty than of matters, I hum-
bly pray your Majesty to peruse this inclosed paper,
containing a diligence, which I have used in omnem
eventum. If Towerfon (z), as a passionate man, have
overcome himself in his opinion, so it is. But if his
company make this good, then I am very glad to see
in the case, wherein we now stand, there is this hope
left, and your Majesty's honour preserved in the ex-
tier. God have your Majesty in his divine pro-
tection.

Your Majesty's most devoted, and
most bounden servant, &c.

(y) Mary, widow of Henry, Earl of Pembroke, who died
January 19, 1604, daughter of Sir Henry Sidney, and sister of
Sir Philip. She died September 25, 1621.

(z) Whose brother, Captain Gabriel Towerfon, was one of
the English merchants executed by the Dutch at Amboyna, in
1623.
This is a secret to all men but my Lord Chancellor; and we go on this day with the new company, without discouraging them at all.

September 18, 1616.

Indorsed,

To the King, upon Powerson’s propositions about the cloth business.

RICHARD MARTIN, Esq; (a) to Sir Francis Bacon.

Right Honourable,

My attendance at court two days (in vain, considering the end of my journey) was no loss unto me, seeing thereby I made the gain of the overture and assurance of your Honour’s affection. These comforts have given new life and strength to my hopes, which before began to faint. I know, what your Honour promiseth, you will undertake; and what you undertake, you seldom fail to compass; for such proof of your prudence and industry your Honour hath of late times given to the swaying world. There is, to my understanding, no great intricacy in my affair, in which I plainly descry the course to the shore I would land at; to which neither I, nor any other, can attain, without the direction of our great master-pilot, who will not stir much without the beloved mate found the way. Both these none

(a) Born about 1570, entered a commoner of Broad-gate's Hall, now Pembroke-College, Oxford, in 1585, whence he removed to the Middle-Temple. In the Parliament of 1601, he served for the borough of Barnstaple in Devon; and in the first parliament of King James I, he served for Cirencester in Gloucestershire. He was chosen Recorder of London in September 1618; but died in the last day of the following month. He was much esteemed by the men of learning and genius of that age.
can so well set a work as yourself, who have not only their ear, but their affection, and that with good right, as I hope, in time, to good and public purpose. It is fit likewise, that your Honour know all my advantages. The present incumbent is tied to me by firm promise, which gives an impediment to the competitors, whereof one already, according to the heaviness of his name and nature, petit deorum. And though I be a bad courtier, yet I know the style of gratitude, and shall learn as I am instructed. Whatsoever your Honour shall undertake for me, I will make good. Therefore I humbly and earnestly intreat your best endeavour, to assure to yourself and your master a servant, who both can and will, though as yet mistaken, advance his honour and service with advantage. Your love and wisdom is my last address; and on the real nobleness of your nature (whereof there is so good proof) stands my last hope. If I now find a stop, I will resolve it is fatum Carthaginis, and sit down in perpetual peace. In this business I desire all convenient silence; for though I can endure to be refused, yet it would trouble me to have my name blasted. If your Honour return not, and you think it requisite, I will attend at court. Mean time, with all humble and hearty wishes for increase of all happiness, I kiss your Honour's hands.

Your Honour's humbly at command,

September 27, 1616.

R. Martin.

To the Right Honourable Sir Francis Bacon, Knight, his Majesty's Attorney General, and one of his Majesty's most honourable privy council, my singular patron, at court.
To the King.

It may please your Majesty,

THIS morning, according to your Majesty’s command, we have had my Lord Chief Justice of the King’s Bench (b) before us, we being assisted by all your learned council, except Serjeant Crew, who was then gone to attend your Majesty. It was delivered unto him, that your Majesty’s pleasure was, that we should receive an account from him of the performance of a commandment of your Majesty laid upon him, which was, that he should enter into a view and retracction of such novelties, and errors, and offensive conceits, as were dispersed in his Reports; that he had had good time to do it; and we doubted not but he had used good endeavour in it, which we desired now in particular to receive from him.

His speech was, that there were of his Reports eleven books, that contained about five hundred cases: that heretofore, in other Reports, as namely, those of Mr. Plowden (c), which he reverenced much, there hath been found nevertheless errors, which the wisdom of time had discovered, and later judgments controlled; and enumerated to us four cases in Plow-

(b) Sir Edward Coke.

(c) Edmund Plowden, born of an ancient family of that name at Plowden in Shropshire, about the year 1518. He was educated at Cambridge and Oxford, in both which universities he studied physic for some time, being admitted, in November 1552, by the latter to practice chirurgery and physic. After this, he applied himself to the study of the common law, in which he soon became eminent, and in 1557 was autumn reader to the Middle-Temple, and three years after lent reader, having been made Serjeant, Octobre 27, 1558. He died February 6, 1584, at the age of sixty seven, in the profession of the Roman Catholic faith.
den, which were erroneous: and thereupon delivered in to us the inclosed paper, wherein your Majesty may perceive, that my Lord is an happy man, that there should be no more errors in his five hundred cases, than in a few cases of Plowden. Your Majesty may also perceive, that your Majesty's direction to my Lord Chancellor and myself, and the travail taken by us and Mr. Sollicitor (d), in following and performing your direction, was not altogether lost; for that of those three heads, which we principally respected, which were the rights and liberties of the church, your prerogative, and the jurisdiction of other your courts, my Lord hath scarcely fallen upon any, except it be the Prince's case, which also yet seemeth to stand but upon the grammatical, of French and Latin.

My Lord did also give his promise, which your Majesty shall find in the end of his writing, thus far in a kind of common place or thesis, that it was sin for a man to go against his own conscience, though erroneous, except his conscience be first informed and satisfied.

The Lord Chancellor in the conclusion signified to my Lord Coke your Majesty's commandment, that until report made, and your pleasure thereupon known, he shall forbear his sitting at Westminster, &c. not restraining nevertheless any other exercise of his place of Chief Justice in private.

Thus having performed, to the best of our understanding, your royal commandment, we rest ever

Your Majesty's most faithful, and

most bounden servants, &c.

(d) Sir Henry Yelverton.
The Lord Viscount Villiers to Sir Francis Bacon, 
Attorney General.

SIR,

I HAVE acquainted his Majesty with my Lord Chancellor's and your report, touching my Lord Coke; as also with your opinion therein; which his Majesty doth dislike for these three reasons: first, because, that by this course you propound, the process cannot have a beginning, till after his Majesty's return; which, how long it may last after, no man knoweth. He therefore thinketh it too long and uncertain a delay, to keep the bench so long void from a Chief Justice. Secondly, although his Majesty did use the council's advice in dealing with the Chief Justice upon his other misdemeanors; yet he would be loth to lessen his prerogative, in making the council judges, whether he should be turned out of his place or no, if the case should so require. Thirdly, for that my Lord Coke hath sought means to kifs his Majesty's hands, and withal, to acquaint him with some things of great importance to his service; he holdeth it not fit to admit him to his presence, before these points be determined, because that would be a grant of his pardon before he had his trial. And if those things, wherewith he is to acquaint his Majesty, be of such consequence, it would be dangerous and prejudicial to his Majesty, to delay him too long: Notwithstanding, if you shall advise of any other reasons to the contrary, his Majesty would have you, with all the speed you can, to send them unto him; and in the mean time to keep back his Majesty's letter, which is herein sent unto you, from my Lord Coke's knowledge,
It may please your most excellent Majesty,

We have considered of the letters, which we received from your Majesty, as well that written to us both, as that other written by my Lord Villiers to me, the Attorney, which I thought good to acquaint my Lord Chancellor withal, the better to give your Majesty satisfaction. And we most humbly desire your Majesty to think, that we are, and ever shall be, ready to perform and obey your Majesty's directions; towards which, the first degree is to understand them well.

In answer therefore to both the said letters, as well concerning matter as concerning time, we shall in all humbleness offer to your Majesty's high wisdom the considerations following:

First, we did conceive, that after my Lord Coke was sequestered from the table and his circuits (e), when your Majesty laid upon him your command-

ment for the expurgating of his Reports, and commanded also our service to look into them, and into other novelties introduced into the government, your Majesty had in this your doing two principal ends:

The one, to see, if upon so fair an occasion, he would make any expiation of his former faults; and also shew himself sensible of those things in his Reports, which he could not but know were the likest to be offensive to your Majesty.

The other, to perform de vero this right to your crown and succession, and your people also; that those errors and novelties might not run on, and authorize by time, but might be taken away, whether he contented to it or no.

But we did not conceive your Majesty would have had him charged with those faults of his book, or those other novelties; but only would have had them represented to you for your better information.

Now your Majesty seeth what he hath done; you can better judge of it than we can. If, upon this probation added to former matters, your Majesty think him not fit for your service, we must in all humbleness subscribe to your Majesty, and acknowledge, that neither his displacing (considering he holdeth his place but during your will and pleasure) nor the choice of a fit man to be put in his room, are council-table matters, but are to proceed wholly from your Majesty's great wisdom, and gracious pleasure. So that in this course, it is but the significance of your pleasure, and the business is at an end as to him. Only there remaineth the actual expurgation or animadversions of the books.

But if your Majesty understand it, that he shall be charged, then, as your Majesty belth knoweth, justice requireth, that he be heard and called to his answer, and then your Majesty will be pleased to consider, before whom he shall be charged; whether before the body of your council (as formerly he was,) or some.
some selected commissioners; for we conceive your Majesty will not think it convenient it should be before us two only. Also the manner of his charge is considerable, whether it shall be verbal by your learned council, as it was last; or whether, in respect of the multiplicity of matters, he shall not have the collections, we have made in writing, delivered to him. Also the matter of his charge is likewise considerable, whether any of those points of novelty, which by your Majesty's commandment we collected, shall be made part of his charge; or only the faults of his books, and the prohibitions and habeas corpus, collected by my Lord of Canterbury. In all which course we foresee length of time, not so much for your learned council to be prepared (for that is almost done already,) but because himself, no doubt, will crave time of advice to peruse his own books, and to see, whether the collections be true, and that he be justly charged; and then to produce his proofs, that those things, which he shall be charged with, were not conceits or singularities of his own, but the acts of court, and other like things, tending to excitation or extenuation; wherein we do not see, how the time of divers days, if not of weeks, can be denied him.

Now for time, (if this last course of charging him be taken) we may only inform your Majesty thus much, that the absence of a Chief Justice, though it should be for a whole term, as it hath been often upon sickness, can be no hindrance to common justice. For the business of the King's Bench may be dispatched by the rest of the Judges: his voice in the Star-Chamber may be supplied by any other Judge, that my Lord Chancellor shall call; and the trials by nisi prius may be supplied by commission.

But as for those great matters of discovery, we can say nothing more than this, that either they are old or new. If old, he is to blame for having kept them
Letters, &c. of

them so long: if new, or whatsoever, he may advertise your Majesty of them by letter, or deliver them by word to such counsellor, as your Majesty will assign.

Thus we hope your Majesty will accept of our sincerity, having dealt freely and openly with your Majesty, as becometh us: and when we shall receive your pleasure and direction, we shall execute and obey the same in all things; ending with our prayers for your Majesty, and rest

Your Majesty's most faithful, and

most bounden servants,

October 6, 1616.

T. Ellesmere Cane.
Francis Bacon.

Remembrances of his Majesty's declaration, touching the Lord Coke.

That although the discharging and removing of his Majesty's officers and servants, as well as the choice and advancement of men to place, be no council-table matters, but belong to his Majesty's princely will, and secret judgement; yet his Majesty will do his council this honour, that in his resolutions of that kind, his council shall know them first before others, and shall know them, accompanied by their causes, making as it were a private manifesto, or revealing of himself to them without parables.

Then to have the report of the Lords touching the business of the Lord Coke, and the last order of the council read.

That done, his Majesty farther to declare, that he might, upon the same three grounds in the order mentioned,
mentioned, of deceit, contempt, and slander of his government, very justly have proceeded then, not only to have put him from his place of Chief Justice, but to have brought him in question in the Star-Chamber, which would have been his utter overthrow; but then his Majesty was pleased for that time only to put him off from the council-table, and from the public exercise of his place of Chief Justice, and to take farther time to deliberate.

That in this his Majesty's deliberation (besides the present occasion) he had in some things looked back to the Lord Coke's former carriage, and in some things looked forward, to make some farther trial of him.

That for things passed, his Majesty had noted in him a perpetual turbulent carriage, first towards the liberties of his church and estate ecclesiastical; towards his prerogative royal, and the branches thereof; and likewise towards all the settled jurisdictions of all his other courts, the High Commission, the Star-Chamber, the Chancery, the Provincial Councils, the Admiralty, the Duchy, the Court of Requests, the Commission of Inquiries, the new Boroughs of Ireland; in all which he had raised troubles and new questions; and lastly, in that, which might concern the safety of his royal person, by his exposition of the laws in cases of high treason.

That, besides the actions themselves, his Majesty, in his princely wisdom, hath made two special observations of him; the one, that he having in his nature not one part of those things, which are popular in men, being neither civil, nor affable, nor magnificent, he hath made himself popular by design only, in pulling down government. The other, that whereas his Majesty might have expected a change in him, when he made him his own, by taking him to be of his council, it made no change at all, but to the worse, he holding on all his former channel,
and running separate courses from the rest of his council; and rather buying himself in casting fears before his council, concerning what they could not do, than joining his advice what they should do.

That his Majesty, desirous yet to make a farther trial of him, had given him the summer's vacation to reform his Reports, wherein there be many dangerous conceits of his own uttered for law, to the prejudice of his crown, parliament, and subjects; and to see, whether by this he would in any part redeem his fault. But that his Majesty hath failed of the redemption he desired, but hath met with another kind of redemption from him, which he little expected. For as to the Reports, after three months time and consideration, he had offered his Majesty only five animadversions, being rather a scorn, than a satisfaction to his Majesty; whereof one was, that in the Prince's case he had found out the French statute, which was filz aîné, whereas the Latin was primogenitus; and so the Prince is Duke of Cornwall in French, and not Duke of Cornwall in Latin. And another was, that he had set Montagu to be Chief Justice in Henry VIII's time, when it should have been in Edward VI's, and such other stuff; not falling upon any of those things, which he could not but know were offensive.

That hereupon his Majesty thought good to refresh his memory, and out of many cases, which his Majesty caused to be collated, to require his answer to five, being all such, as were but expatiations of his own, and no judgments; whereunto he returned such an answer, as did either justify himself, or elude the matter, so as his Majesty seems plainly antiquum abstinet.
To Sir Francis Bacon, Attorney General (*).

Sir,

I have kept your man here thus long, because I thought there would have been some occasion for me to write after Mr. Solicitor General's being with the King. But he hath received so full instruction from his Majesty, that there is nothing left for me to add in the business. And so I rest,

Your faithful servant,

Royston, the 13th of Octob. 1616.

George Villiers.

To the Right Honourable Sir Francis Bacon, Knight, one of his Majesty's Privy Council, and his Attorney General.

Sir Edmund Bacon (f) to Sir Francis Bacon;
Attorney General.

My Lord,

I am bold to present unto your hands by this bearer, whom the law calls up, some salt of wormwood, being uncertain, whether the regard of your health makes you still continue the use of that medicine. I could wish it otherwise; for I am persuaded, that all diuretics, which carry with them that punctuous nature and caustic quality by calci-

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(f) Nephew of Sir Francis Bacon, being eldest son of Sir Nicolas Bacon, eldest son of Sir Nicolas Bacon, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal. Sir Edmund died without issue, April 10, 1649. There are several letters to him from Sir Henry Wotton, printed among the works of the latter.

H 2 nation,
nation, are hurtful to the kidneys, if not enemies to the other principal parts of the body. Wherein, if it shall please you, for your better satisfaction, to call the advice of your learned physicians, and that they shall resolve of any medicine for your health, wherein my poor labour may avail you, you know where your faithful apothecary dwells, who will be ready at your commandment; as I am bound both by your favours to myself, as also by those to my nephew, whom you have brought out of darkness into light, and, by what I hear, have already made him, by your bounty, a subject of emulation to his elder brother. We are all partakers of this your kindness towards him; and, for myself, I shall be ever ready to deserve it by any service, that shall lie in the power of

Your Lordship's poor nephew,

Redgrave, this 19th of October, 1616.

EDM. BACON.

For the Right Honourable Sir Francis Bacon, Knight, his Majesty's Attorney General, and one of his most Honourable Privy Counsellors, be these delivered at London.

To the King.

May it please your excellent Majesty,

I SEND your Majesty a form of discharge for my Lord Coke from his place of Chief Justice of your Bench (g).

(g) Sir Edward Coke was removed from that post on the 15th of November, 1616.

I send.
I send also a warrant to the Lord Chancellor, for making forth a writ for a new Chief Justice, leaving a blank for the name to be supplied by your Majesty's presence; for I never received your Majesty's express pleasure in it.

If your Majesty resolve of Montagu (b) (as I conceive and wish) it is very material, as these times are, that your Majesty have some care, that the Recorder succeeding be a temperate and discreet man, and assured to your Majesty's service. If your Majesty, without too much harshness, can continue the place within your own servants, it is best: if not, the man, upon whom the choice is like to fall, which is Coventry (i), I hold doubtful for your service; not but that he is a well learned, and an honest man; but he hath been, as it were, bred by Lord Coke, and seasoned in his ways.

God preserve your Majesty.

Your Majesty's most humble, and
most bounden servant,

Fr. Bacon.

I send not these things, which concern my Lord Coke, by my Lord Villiers, for such reasons as your Majesty may conceive.

November 13, at noon [1616].

(b) Sir Henry Montagu, Recorder of London, who was made Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, November 16, 1616. He was afterwards made Lord Treasurer, and created Earl of Manchester.

(i) Thomas Coventry, Esq; afterwards Lord Keeper of the Great Seal.
It may please your most excellent Majesty,

I send your Majesty, according to your commandment, the warrant for the review of Sir Edward Coke's Reports. I had prepared it before I received your Majesty's pleasure: but I was glad to see it was in your mind, as well as in my hands. In the nomination, which your Majesty made of the Judges, to whom it should be directed, your Majesty could not name the Lord Chief Justice, that now is (k), because he was not then declared: but you could not leave him out now, without discountenance.

I send your Majesty the state of Lord Darcy's cause (l) in the Star-Chamber, set down by Mr. Solicitor,

(k) Sir Henry Montagu.

(l) This is just mentioned in a letter of Sir Francis Bacon to the Lord Viscount Villiers, printed in his works; but is more particularly stated in the Reports of Sir Henry Hobart, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, p. 120, 121. Edit. London, 1658, fol. as follows. The Lord Darcy of the North sued Gervase Markham, Esq.; in the Star-Chamber, in 1616, on this occasion. They had hunted together, and the defendant and a servant of the plaintiff, one Beckwith, fell together by the ears in the field; and Beckwith threw him down, and was upon him cuffing him, when the Lord Darcy took his servant off, and reproved him. However, Mr. Markham expressing some anger against his Lordship, and charging him with maintaining his man, Lord Darcy answered, that he had used Mr. Markham kindly; for if he had not rescued him from his man, the latter would have beaten him to rags. Mr. Markham, upon this, wrote five or six letters to Lord Darcy, subscribing them with his name; but did not send them, and only dispersed them unsealed in the fields; the purport of them being this: that whereas the Lord Darcy had said, that, but for him, his servant Beckwith had beaten him to rags, he lied; and, as often as he should speak it, he lied; and that he would maintain this with his life: adding, that he had dispersed those letters, that his Lordship might find them, or somebody else bring them to him; and
Sollicitor (m), and mentioned in the letters, which your Majesty received from the Lords. I leave all in humbleness to your Majesty's royal judgement: but this is true, that it was the clear opinion of my Lord Chancellor, and myself, and the two Chief Justices, and others, that it is a cause most fit for the censure of the court, both for the repelling of duels, and the encouragement of complaints in courts of justice. If your Majesty be pleased it shall go on, there rested but Wednesday next for the hearing; for the last day of term is commonly left for orders, though sometimes, upon extraordinary occasion, it hath been set down for the hearing of some great cause.

I send your Majesty also Baron Bromley's (n) report, which your Majesty required; whereby your Majesty may perceive things go not so well in Cumberland (which is the seat of the party your Majesty named to me) as was conceived. And yet if there were land-winds, as there be sea-winds, to bind men in, I could wish he were a little wind-bound, to keep him in the south.

But while your Majesty passeth the accounts of Judges in circuits, your Majesty will give me leave to think of the Judges here in their upper region. And because Tacitus saith well, *opportuni magnis comitibus transtitas rerum*; now upon this change, when he, that letteth, is gone, I shall endeavour, to the best of my power and skill, that there may be a consent and united mind in your Judges to serve you, and strengthen your business. For I am persuaded there cannot be a sacrifice, from which there may come up to you

and that if his Lordship were desirous to speak with him, he might send his boy, who should be well used. For this offence, Mr. Markham was cenfured, and fined 500l. by the Star-Chamber.

(m) Sir Henry Yelverton.
(n) Edward Bromley, made one of the Barons of the Exchequer, February 6, 1615.
a sweeter odour of rest, than this effect, whereof I speak.

For this wretched murderer, Bertram (o), now gone to his place, I have, perceiving your Majesty’s good liking of what I propounded, taken order, that there shall be a declaration concerning the cause in the King’s Bench, by occasion of punishment of the offence of his keeper; and another in Chancery, upon the occasion of moving for an order, according to his just and righteous report. And yet withal, I have set on work a good pen (p) (and myself will overlook it) for making some little pamphlet fit to fly abroad in the country.

For your Majesty’s proclamation touching the wearing of cloth, after I had drawn a form as near as I could to your Majesty’s direction, I propounded it to the Lords, my Lord Chancellor being then absent; and after their Lordships good approbation, and some points by them altered, I obtained leave of them to confer thereupon with my Lord Chancellor and some principal Judges, which I did this afternoon; so as, it being now perfected, I shall offer it to the board to-morrow, and so send it to your Majesty.

So humbly craving your Majesty’s pardon for troubling you with so long a letter, specially being accompanied with other papers, I ever rest,

Your Majesty’s most humble, and bounden servant,

This 21st of November, at ten at night [1616].

Fr. Bacon.

(o) John Bertram, a grave man, above seventy years of age, and of a clear reputation, according to Camden, Annales Regis Jacobi I., p. 21. He killed with a pistol, in Lincoln’s Inn, on the 12th of November 1616, Sir John Tyndal, a Master in Chancery, for having made a report against him in a cause, wherein the sum contended for did not exceed 200l. He hanged himself in prison on the 17th of that month.  

(p) Mr. Trott.

Remembrances
Remembrances for the King before his going into Scotland.

May it please your Majesty,

ALTHOUGH your journey be but as a long progress, and that your Majesty shall be still within your own land; and therefore any extraordinary course neither needful, nor in my opinion fit; yet nevertheless, I thought it agreeable to my duty and care of your service, to put you in mind of those points of form, which have relation, not so much to a journey into Scotland, as to an absence from your city of London for six months, or to a distance from your said city near three hundred miles; and that in an ordinary course, wherein I lead myself, by calling to consideration what things there are, that require your signature, and may seem not so fit to expect sending to and fro; and therefore to be supplied by some precedent warrants.

First, your ordinary commissions of justice, of assize, and the peace, need not your signature, but pass of course by your Chancellor. And your commissions of lieutenancy, though they need your signature, yet if any of the Lieutenants should die, your Majesty's choice and pleasure may be very well attended. Only I should think it, under your Majesty's correction, that such of your Lord Lieutenants, as do not attend your person, were commanded to abide within their countries respectively.

For grants, if there were a longer cessation, I think your Majesty will easily believe it will do no hurt. And yet if any be necessary, the continual dispatches will supply that turn.

That, which is chiefly considerable, is proclamations, which all do require your Majesty's signature, except you leave some warrant under your great seal to your standing council here in London.
It is true, I cannot foresee any case of such sudden necessity, except it should be the apprehension of some great offenders, or the adjournment of the term upon sickness, or some riot in the city, such as hath been about the liberties of the Tower, or against strangers, &c. But your Majesty, in your great wisdom, may perhaps think of many things, that I cannot remember, or foresee: and therefore it was fit to refer those things to your better judgement.

Also my Lord Chancellor's age and health is such, as it doth not only admit, but require the accident of his death (q) to be thought of; which may fall in such a time, as the very commissions of ordinary justice before mentioned, and writs, which require present dispatch, cannot well be put off. Therefore your Majesty may be pleased to take into consideration, whether you will not have such a commission, as was prepared about this time twelvemonth in my Lord's extreme sickness, for the taking of the seal into custody, and for the seal of writs and commissions for ordinary justice, till you may advise of a Chancellor or Keeper of the Great Seal.

Your Majesty will graciously pardon my care, which is assiduous; and it is good to err in caring even rather too much than too little. These things, for so much as concerneth forms, ought to proceed from my place, as Attorney, unto which you have added some interest in matter, by making me of your privy council. But for the main they rest wholly in your princely judgement, being well informed; because miracles are ceased, though admiration will not cease, while you live.

Indorsed, February 21, 1616.

(q) He died at the age of seventy, on the 15th of March, 1617, having resigned the great seal on the 3d of that month; which was given on the 7th to Sir Francis Bacon.
Most gracious Sovereign,

I THINK it now my duty to inform your Majesty of the motives, that induced the Lord Chancellor and Judges to resolve, that a murder of felony, committed by one Englishman upon another in a foreign kingdom, shall be punished before the Constable and Marshal here in England.

First, in the book-case, in the 13th year of King Henry the Fourth, in whose reign the statute was made, it is expressly said, one liege-man was killed in Scotland by another liege-man; and the wife of him, that was killed, did file an appeal of murder in the Constable's Court of England. Vide Statutum, faith the book, de primo Henrici IV. Cap. 14. Et contemporanea exposticio est fortissima in Lege. Stanford (r), an author without exception, faith thus, fol. 65. a.: "By the statute of Henry IV. Cap. 14. if any subject kill another subject in a foreign kingdom, the wife of him, that is slain, may have an appeal in England before the Constable and Marshal: which is a cas in terminis terminantibus. And when the wife, if the party slain have any, shall have an appeal, there, if he hath no wife, his next heir shall have it."

If any fact be committed out of the kingdom, upon the high sea, the Lord Admiral shall determine it. If in a foreign kingdom, the cognizance belongeth to the Constable, where the jurisdiction pertains to him.

(r) Sir William, the most ancient writer on the Pleas of the Crown. He was born in Middlesex, August 22, 1509, educated in the university of Oxford, studied the law at Gray's Inn, in which he was elected autumn reader in 1545, made Serjeant in 1552, the year following Queen's Serjeant, and, in 1554, one of the Justices of the Common Pleas. He died August 28, 1558.

And
And these authorities being seen by Bromley, Chancellor, and the two Chief Justices, they clearly resolved the case, as before I have certified your Majesty.

I humbly desire I may be so happy, as to kiss your Majesty's hands, and to my exceeding comfort to see your sacred person; and I shall ever rest

Your Majesty's faithful and loyal subject,
February 25 [1614].

Edw. Coke.

To the King's most Excellent Majesty.

To the King (s).

May it please your most excellent Majesty,

My continual meditations upon your Majesty's service and greatness have, amongst other things, produced this paper inclosed, which I most humbly pray your Majesty to excuse, being that, which, in my judgement, I think to be good both de vero, and ad populum. Of other things I have written to my Lord of Buckingham. God for ever preserve and prosper your Majesty.

Your Majesty's humble servant,
most devoted and most bounden,

March 23, 1616.

Fr. Bacon.

Indorsed,
My Lord Keeper to his Majesty, with some additional instructions for Sir John Digby.

(*) His Majesty had begun his journey towards Scotland, on the 14th of March, 1614.

Additional
BESIDES your instructions directory to the substance of the main errand, we would have you in the whole carriage and passages of the negotiation, as well with the King himself, as the Duke of Lerma, and council there, intermix discourse upon fit occasions, that may express ourselves to the effect following:

That you doubt not, but that both Kings, for that which concerns religion, will proceed sincerely, both being intire and perfect in their own belief and way. But that there are so many noble and excellent effects, which are equally acceptable to both religions, and for the good and happiness of the Christian world, which may arise of this conjunction, as the union of both Kings in actions of state, as may make the difference in religion as laid aside, and almost forgotten.

As first, that it will be a means utterly toextinguish and extirpate pirates, which are the common enemies of mankind, and do so much infest Europe at this time.

Also, that it may be a beginning and seed (for the like actions heretofore have had leis beginnings) of a holy war against the Turk; whereunto it seems the events of time do invite Christian Kings, in respect of the great corruption and relaxation of discipline of war in that empire; and much more in respect of the utter ruin and enervation of the Grand Signor's navy and forces by sea; which openeth a way (with congregating vast armies by land) to suffocate and starve Constantinople, and thereby to put those provinces into mutiny and insurrection.

(t) Ambassador to the court of Spain.
Also, that by the same conjunction there will be erected a tribunal, or praetorian power, to decide the controversies, which may arise amongst the princes and estates of Christendom, without effusion of Christian blood; for so much as any estate of Christendom will hardly recede from that, which the two Kings shall mediate and determine.

Also, that whereas there doth, as it were, creep upon the ground a disposition in some places to make popular estates and leagues to the disadvantage of monarchies, the conjunction of the two Kings will be able to stop and impede the growth of any such evil.

These discourses you shall do well frequently to treat upon, and therewithal to fill up the spaces of the active part of your negotiation; representing, that it stands well with the greatness and majesty of the two Kings to extend their cogitations and the influence of their government, not only to their own subjects, but to the state of the whole world besides, specially the Christian portion thereof.

Account of Council Business.

For remedy against the infestation of pirates, than which there is not a better work under heaven, and therefore worthy of the great care his Majesty hath expressed concerning the same, this is done:

First, Sir Thomas Smith (u) hath certified in writing, on the behalf of the merchants of London, that

(u) of Bishops in Kent, second son of Thomas Smith, of Offenhanger, of that county, Esq. He had farmed the customs in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, and was sent, by King James I, Ambassador to the court of Russia, in March 1664, from whence returning, he was made governor of the Society of Merchants trading to the East Indies, Muscovy, the
that there will be a contribution of 20,000 l. a year, during two years' space, towards the charge of repressing the pirates; wherein we do both conceive, that this, being as the first offer, will be increased. And we consider also, that the merchants of the West, who have sustained in proportion far greater damage than those of London, will come into the circle, and follow the example; and for that purpose letters are directed unto them.

Secondly, for the consultation de modo of the arming and proceeding against them, in respect that my Lord Admiral (w) cometh not yet abroad, the table hath referred it to my Lord Treasurer (x), the Lord Carew (y), and Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer (z), who heretofore hath served as Treasurer of the Navy, to confer with the Lord Admiral, calling to that conference Sir Robert Mansell, and others expert in service; and so to make report unto the board. At which time some principal merchants shall likewise attend for the Lords better information.

So that, when this is done, his Majesty shall be advertised from the table: whereupon his Majesty may be pleased to take into his royal consideration, both the business in itself, and as it may have relation to Sir John Digby's embassage.

For safety and caution against tumults and disorders in and near the city, in respect of some idle fly-

the French and Summer Islands; and Treasurer for the colony and company of Virginia. He built a magnificent house at Deptford, which was burnt on the 30th of January, 1618; and in April, 1619, he was removed from his employments of Governor and Treasurer, upon several complaints of frauds committed by him.

(w) Charles Howard, Earl of Nottingham.
(x) Thomas Howard, Earl of Suffolk.
(y) George, Lord Carew, who had been president of Munster in Ireland, and was now Master of the Ordnance. He was created Earl of Totnes by King Charles I, in 1626.
(z) Sir Fulk Grevile.
ing papers, that were cast abroad of a May-day, &c.
the Lords have wisely taken a course neither to nurse
it, or nourish it, by too much apprehension, nor
much less to neglect due provision to make all sure.
And therefore order is given, that as well the trained
bands, as the military bands, newly erected, shall
be in muster as well weekly, in the mean time,
on every Thursday (which is the day upon which
May-day falleth) as in the May-week itself, the
Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, and Thursday. Be-
sides, that the strength of the watch shall that day be
increased.

For the buildings in and about London, order is
given for four selected Aldermen, and four selected
Justices, to have the care and charge thereof laid
upon them; and they answerable for the observing
of his Majesty's proclamation, and for stop of all
farther building; for which purposes the said Eflus
are warned to be before the board, where they shall
receive a strait charge, and be tied to a continual
account.

For the Provoft's Marshalls, there is already di-
rection given for the city and the counties adjacent;
and it shall be strengthened with farther commission,
if there be cause.

For the proclamation, that Lieutenants (not being
counsellors) Deputy-Lieutenants, Justices of the
Peace, and gentlemen of quality, should depart the
city, and reside in their countries; we find the city
so dead of company of that kind for the present,
as we account it out of season to command that,
which is already done. But after men have attended
their business the two next terms, in the end of Tri-
unity term, according to the custom, when the Ju-
tices shall attend at the Star-Chamber, I shall give
a charge concerning the same: and that shall be cor-
roborated by a proclamation, if cause be.
For the information given against the Witheringtons, that they should countenance and abet the spoils and disorders in the middle shires; we find the informers to fault and fail in their accusation. Nevertheless, upon my motion, the table hath ordered, that the informer shall attend one of the clerks of the council, and set down articulately what he can speak, and how he can prove it, and against whom, either the Witheringtons or others.

For the causes of Ireland, and the late letters from the Deputy (a), we have but entered into them, and have appointed Tuesday for a farther consultation of the same; and therefore of that subject I forbear to write more for this present.

Indorsed,
March 30, 1617. An account of council business.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

WHEREAS the late Lord Chancellor thought it fit to dismiss out of the Chancery a cause touching Henry Skipwith to the common law, where he desireth it should be decided; these are to intreat your Lordship (b) in the gentleman's favour, that if

(a) Sir Oliver St. John, afterwards Viscount Grandison.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

(b) This is the first of many letters, which the Marquis of Buckingham wrote to Lord Bacon in favour of persons, who had causes depending in, or likely to come into, the court of Chancery. And it is not improbable, that such recommendations were considered in that age as less extraordinary and irregular, than they would appear now. The Marquis made the same kind of applications to Lord Bacon's successor, the Lord Keeper Williams, in whose Life, by Bishop Hacket, Part I, p. 107, we are informed, that "there was not a cause of moment, but, as soon as it came to publication, one of the parties brought letters " from this mighty Peer, and the Lord Keeper's patron."
the adverse party shall attempt to bring it now back again into your Lordship's court, you would not retain it there, but let it rest in the place, where now it is, that without more vexation unto him in posting him from one to another, he may have a final hearing and determination thereof. And so I rest

Your Lordship's ever at command,

G. Buckingham.

My Lord,

This is a business, wherein I spake to my Lord Chancellor (c); whereupon he dismissed the suit.

Lincoln, the 4th of April, 1617.

The Lord Keeper to his niece, touching her Marriage.

Good Niece,

Amongst your other virtues, I know there wanteth not in you a mind to hearken to the advice of your friends. And therefore you will give me leave to move you again more seriously than before in the match with Mr. Comptroller (d). The state, wherein you now are, is to be preferred before

(c) Ellesmere.

(d) Sir Thomas Edmondes, who had been appointed to that office, December 21, 1616; and, January 19, 1617, was made Treasurer of the Household. He had been married to Magdalen, one of the daughters and coheirs of Sir John Wood, Knight, Clerk of the Signet; which Lady died at Paris, December 31, 1614.

The proposal for a second marriage between him and the Lord Keeper's niece does not appear to have had success.

Marriage,
marriage, or changed for marriage, not simply the one or the other, but according as, by God's providence, the offers of marriage are more or less fit to be embraced. This gentleman is religious, a person of honour, being Counsellor of State, a great officer, and in very good favour with his Majesty. He is of years and health fit to be comfortable to you, and to free you of burdensome cares. He is of good means, and a wise and provident man, and of a loving and excellent good nature; and, I find, hath set his affections upon you; so as I foresee you may sooner change your mind, which, as you told me, is not yet towards marriage, than find so happy a choice. I hear he is willing to visit you, before his going into France, which, by the King's commandment, is to be within some ten days: and I could wish you used him kindly, and with respect. His return out of France is intended before Michaelmas. God direct you, and be with you. I rest

Your very loving uncle, and assured friend,

Dorset-house, this 28th of Apr. 1617.

Fr. Bacon.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

I have acquainted his Majesty with your letters, who liked all your proceedings well, saving only the point, for which you have since made amends, in obeying his pleasure touching the proclamation. His Majesty would have your Lordship go thoroughly about the business of Ireland, whereinto you are so well entered, especially at this time, that the Chief

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7266.

I 2

Justice
Justice (e) is come over, who hath delivered his opinion thereof to his Majesty, and hath understood what his Majesty conceived of the same; wherewith he will acquaint your Lordship, and with his own observation and judgement of the business of that country.

I give your Lordship hearty thanks for your care to satisfy my Lady of Rutland’s (f) desire; and will be as careful, when I come to York, of recommend your suit to the Bishop (g). So I rest

Your Lordship’s ever at command,

Newark, the 5th of April, 1617.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To my very honourable Lord, Sir Francis Bacon, Knight,

(e) Sir John Denham, one of the Lords Justices of Ireland in 1616. He was made one of the Barons of the Exchequer in England, May 2, 1617. He died January 6, 1638, in the eightieth year of his age. He was the first, who set up customs in Ireland (not but there were laws for the same before;) of which the first year’s revenue amounted but to 500l; but before his death, which was about twenty-two years after, they were let for 54,000 l. per annum. BORLASE’S Reduction of Ireland to the Crown of England, p. 200. Edit. London, 1675.

(f) Frances, Countess of Rutland, first wife of Francis, Earl of Rutland, and daughter and coheir of Sir Henry Knevett, of Charlton in Wiltshire, Knight. She had by the Earl an only daughter and heir, Catharine, first married to George, Marquis, and afterwards Duke, of Buckingham; and secondly to Randolph Mac-Donald, Earl, and afterwards Marquis, of Antrim in Ireland.

(g) relating to York-house.
To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

I SPAKE at York with the Archbishops (b), touching the house, which he hath wholly put into your hands, to do with it what your Lordship shall be pleased.

I have heretofore, since we were in this journey, moved his Majesty for dispatch of my Lord Brackley's (i) business: but because his Majesty never having heard of any precedent in the like case, was of opinion, that this would be of ill consequence in making that dignity as easy, as the pulling out of a sword to make a man a knight, and so make it of little esteem, he was desirous to be assured, first, that it was no new course, before he would do it in that fashion. But since he can receive no assurance from your Lordship of any precedent in that kind, his Majesty intendeth not so to precipitate the business, as to expose that dignity to censure and contempt, in omitting the solemnities required, and usually belonging unto it.

His Majesty, though he were a while troubled with a little pain in his back, which hindered his hunting, is now, God be thanked, very well, and as merry as ever he was; and we have all held out well.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(b) Dr. Tobie Matthew.
(i) who desired to be created Earl in an usual manner, by letters patents, without the delivering of the patent by the King's own hand, or without the ordinary solemnities of creation. He was accordingly created Earl of Bridgewater, May 27, 1617.
I shewed his Majesty your letter, who taketh very well your care and desire to hear of his health. So I commit you to God, and rest
Your Lordship's most assured friend
to do you service,

Auckland, the 12th
of Apr. 1617.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

Since the writing of this letter, I have had some farther speech with his Majesty, touching my Lord Brackley; and find, that if, in your Lordship's information in the course, you write any thing, that may tend to the furthering of the dispatch of it in that kind, he desireth it may be done.

To the LORD KEEPER (*).

My honourable Lord,

I SEND your Lordship the warrant for the Queen (k) signed by his Majesty, to whom I have likewise delivered your Lordship's letter. And touching the matter of the pirates, his Majesty cannot yet resolve; but within a day or two your Lordship shall see a dispatch, which he purpoletb to send to the Lords of his Council in general, what his opinion and pleasure is in that point.

I would not omit this opportunity to let your Lordship know, that his Majesty, God be thanked, is in very good health, and so well pleased with his journey, that I never saw him better, nor merrier.

So I rest

Your Lordship's ever at command,

From Newcastle, the
23d of Apr. 1617.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(k) relating to her house. See the Lord Keeper's letter of April 7, 1617, printed in his works.
To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

I UNDERSTAND, that Sir Lewis Tresham hath a suit depending in the Chancery before your Lordship; and therefore, out of my love and respect toward him, I have thought fit to recommend him unto your favour so far only, as may stand with justice and equity, which is all he desireth, having to encounter a strong party. And because he is shortly to go into Spain about some other business of his own, I farther desire your Lordship to give him what expedition you can, that he may receive no prejudice by his journey.

Your Lordship's ever at command,

G. Buckingham.

Indorsed, May 6, 1616.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE, by reports, heard that, which doth much grieve and trouble me, that your Lordship hath, through a pain in one of your legs, been forced to keep your chamber. And being desirous to understand the true estate of your health, which reports do not always bring, I intreat your Lordship to favour me with a word or two from yourself, which, I hope, will bring me the comfort I desire, who

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol 7006.
cannot but be very sensible of whatsoever happeneth to your Lordship, as being

Your Lordship's most affectionate
to do you service,

G. BUCKINGHAM.

His Majesty, God be thanked, is very well, and safely returned from his hunting journey.

From Edinburgh, the 3d of June, 1617.

To the Earl of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

THIS day I have made even with the business of the kingdom for common justice; not one cause unheard; the lawyers drawn dry of all the motions they were to make; not one petition unanswered. And this, I think, could not be said in our age before. This I speak not out of ostentation, but out of gladness, when I have done my duty. I know men think I cannot continue, if I should thus oppress myself with business: but that account is made. The duties of life are more than life; and, if I die now, I shall die before the world be weary of me, which in our times is somewhat rare. And all this while I have been a little unperfect in my foot, But I have taken pains more like the beast with four legs, than like a man with scarce two legs. But if it be a gout, which I do neither acknowledge, nor much disclaim, it is a good-natured gout; for I have no rage of it, and it goeth away quickly. I have hope it is but an accident of changing from a field-air
air (l) to a Thames-air (m); or rather, I think, it is the distance of the King and your Lordship from me, that doth congeal my humours and spirits.

When I had written this letter, I received your Lordship's letter of the third of this present, wherein your Lordship sheweth your solicitous care of my health, which did wonderfully comfort me. And it is true, that at this present I am very well, and my supposed gout quite vanished.

I humbly pray you to commend my service, infinite in desire, howsoever limited in ability, to his Majesty, to hear of whose health and good disposition is to me the greatest beatitude, which I can receive in this world. And I humbly beseech his Majesty to pardon me, that I do not now send him my account of council business, and other his royal commands, till within these four days; because the flood of business of justice did hitherto wholly possess me; which, I know, worketh this effect, as it contenteth his subjects, and knitteth their hearts more and more to his Majesty, though, I must confess, my mind is upon other matters, as his Majesty shall know, by the grace of God, at his return. God ever bless and prosper you.

Your Lordship's true, and most devoted friend and servant,

Whitehall, this 8th of June, 1617.

FR. BACON.

To the LORD KEEPER (*).

My honourable Lord,

YOUR Lordship will understand, by Sir Thomas Lake's letter, his Majesty's directions touching

(l) Gray's Inn.

(m) Dorset-house, originally belonging to the Bishops of Salisbury, afterwards the house of Sir Richard Sackville, and then of his son, Sir Thomas, Earl of Dorset, and Lord Treasurer.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7086.
L. E. T. T. E. R. S., &c. of

the Surveyor's Deputy of the Court of Wards. And though I assure myself of your Lordship's care of the business, which his Majesty maketh his own; yet my respect to Sir Robert Naunton (n) maketh me add my recommendation thereof to your Lordship, whom I desire to give all the furtherance and assistance you can to the business, that no prejudice or imputation may light upon Sir Robert Naunton, through his zealous affection to attend his Majesty in this journey.

I will not omit to let you know, that his Majesty is very well, and receiveth much contentment in his journey. And with this conclusion, I rest

Your Lordship's most affectionate
to do you service,

Edinburgh, the 11th
of June, 1617.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Viscount Fenton (o).

My very good Lord,

I THANK your Lordship for your courteous letter; and, if I were asked the question, I would always choose rather to have a letter of no news, than a letter of news; for news imports alteration: but letters of kindness and respect bring that, which, though it be no news amongst friends, is more welcome.

I am exceedingly glad to hear, that this journey of his Majesty, which I never esteemed more than a

(n) Surveyor of the Court of Wards.
(o) Sir Thomas Erskine, who for his service to the King, in the attempt of the Earl of Gowry, was, upon his Majesty's accession to the throne of England, made Captain of his guard in the room of Sir Walter Ralegh. He was afterwards created Earl of Kelly.
long progress, saw that it had reason of state joined with pleasure, doth fort to be so joyful and so comfortable.

For your parliament, God speed it well: and for ours, you know the sea would be calm, if it were not for the winds; and I hope the King, whensoever that shall be, will find those winds reasonably well laid. Now that the sun is got up a little higher, God ordains all things to the happiness of his Majesty, and his monarchy.

My health, I thank God, is good; and I hope this supposed gout was but an incomer. I ever rest

Your Lordship's affectionate
and assured friend,

Whitehall, June 18 [1617].

Fr. Bacon.

To the Lord Keeper, written from Scotland June 28, 1618 (p).

I WILL begin to speak of the business of this day; opus hujus diei in die suo, which is of the parliament. It began on the 7th of this month, and ended this day, being the 28th of June. His Majesty, as I perceived by relation, rode thither in great state the first day. These eyes are witnesses, that he rode in an honourable fashion, as I have seen him in England, this day. All the Lords rode in English robes; not an English Lord on horseback, though all the parliament-house at his Majesty's elbow, but my Lord of Buckingham, who waited upon the King's stirrup in his collar, but not in his robes. His Majesty the first day, by way prepara-

(p) From a copy in the Paper-office.
tion to the subject of the parliament, made a declaratory speech, wherein he expressed himself what he would not do, but what he would do. The relation is too prolix for a sheet of paper; and I am promised a copy of it, which I will bring myself unto your Lordship with all the speed I may. But I may not be so reserved, as not to tell your Lordship, that in that speech his Majesty was pleased to do England and Englishmen much honour and grace; and that he studied nothing so much, sleeping and waking, as to reduce the barbarity (I have warrant to use the King's own word) of this country unto the sweet civility of ours; adding farther, that if the Scottish nation would be as docile to learn the goodness of England, as they are teachable to limp after their ill, he might with facility prevail in his desire: for they had learned of the English to drink healths, to wear coaches and gay cloaths, to take tobacco, and to speak neither Scottish nor English. Many such diseases of the times his Majesty was pleased to enumerate, not fit for my pen to remember, and graciously to recognize, how much he was beholden to the English nation for their love and conformity to his desires. The King did personally and infallibly sit amongst them of the parliament every day; so that there fell not a word amongst them, but his Majesty was of council with it.

The whole assembly, after the wonted manner, was abstracted into eight Bishops, eight Lords, eight Gentlemen, Knights of the Shires, and eight Lay Burgesses for towns. And this epitome of the whole parliament did meet every day in one room to treat and debate of the great affairs of the kingdom. There was exception taken against some of the lower-house, which were returned by the country, being pointed at as men averse in their appetites and humours to the business of the parliament, who were deposed of their attendance by the King's power; and others,
better affected, by the King's election, placed in their room.

The greatest and weightiest articles, agitated in this parliament, were specially touching the government of the kirk and kirkmen, and for the abolishing of hereditary Sheriffs to an annual charge; and to enable Justices of the Peace to have as well the real execution, as the title of their places. For now the Sheriff doth hold *jura regalia* in his circuit without check or controlment; and the Justices of the Peace do want the staff of their authority. For the church and commonwealth, his Majesty doth strive to shape the frame of this kingdom to the method and degrees of the government of England, as by reading of the several acts it may appear. The King's desire and travail herein, though he did suffer a momentary opposition, (for his countrymen will speak boldly to him,) hath in part been profitable. For though he hath not fully and complementally prevailed in all things, yet he hath won ground in most things, and hath gained acts of parliament to authorize particular commissioners, to set down orders for the church and churchmen, and to treat with Sheriffs for their offices by way of pecuniary composition. But all these proceedings are to have an inseparable reference to his Majesty. If any prove unreasonably and undutifully refractory, his Majesty hath declared himself, that he will proceed against him by the warrant of the law, and by the strength of his royal power.

His Majesty's speech this day had a necessary connexion with his former discourse. He was pleased to declare what was done and determined in the progress of this parliament; his reasons for it; and that nothing was gotten by shouldering or wrestling, but by debate, judgement, and reason, without any interposition of his royal power in any thing. He commanded the Lords in state of judicature, to give life, by a careful execution, unto the law, which otherwise
Thus much touching the legal part of my advertisement unto you. I will give your Lordship an account in two lines of the complement of the country, time, and place.

The country affords more profit, and better contentment, than I could ever promise myself, by my reading of it.

The King was never more cheerful in body and mind, never so well pleased: and so are the English of all conditions.

The entertainment very honourable, very general, and very full: every day feasts and invitations. I know not who paid for it. They strive, by direction, to give us all fair contentment, that we may know, that the country is not so contemptible, but that it is worth the cherishing.

The Lord Provost of this town, who in English is the Mayor, did feast the King and all the Lords this week; and another day all the gentlemen. And, I confess, it was performed with state, with abundance, and with a general content.

There is a general, and a bold expectation, that Mr. John Murray shall be created a Baron of this country; and some do chat, that my Lord of Buckingham's Mr. Wray shall be a Groom of the Bed-chamber in his place.

There hath been yet no creation of Lords, since his Majesty did touch Scotland: but of Knights many, yet not so many as we heard in England; but it is thought all the Pensioners will be Knights to-morrow. Neither are there any more English Lords sworn of the privy-council here, save my Lord of Buckingham.

The Earl of Southamton, Montgomery, and Hay, are already gone for England.

I have made good profit of my journey hither; for I have gotten a transcript of the speech, which
your Lordship did deliver at your first and happy sitting in Chancery; which I could not gain in England. It hath been shewed to the King; and received due approbation. The God of heaven, all-wise and all-sufficient, guard and assist your Lordship in all your actions: for I can read here whatsoever your Lordship doth act there; and your courses be such, as you need not to fear to give copies of them. But the King’s ears be wide and long, and he seeth with many eyes. All this works for your honour and comfort. I pray God nothing be foiled, heated, or cooled in the carriage. Envy sometimes attends virtues, and not for good; and these bore certain proprieties and circumstances inherent to your Lordship’s mind; which men may admire, I cannot express. But I will wade no farther herein, lest I should seem eloquent. I have been too saucy with your Lordship, and held you too long with my idleness. He, that takes time from your Lordship, robs the public. God give your body health, and your soul heaven.

My Lord of Pembroke, my Lord of Arundel, my Lord Zouch, and Mr. Secretary Lake, were new sworn of the council here.

To the Earl of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

I HAVE sent inclosed a letter to his Majesty concerning the strangers; in which business I had formerly written to your Lordship a joint letter with my Lord of Canterbury, and my Lord Privy-Seal (q), and Mr. Secretary Winwood.

I am, I thank God, much relieved with my being in the country-air, and the order I keep; so that of late years I have not found my health better.

(q) Edward, Earl of Worcester.

Your
Your Lordship writeth seldomer than you were wont; but when you are once gotten into England, you will be more at leisure. God bless and prosper you.

Your Lordship's true and devoted friend and servant,

Goshambury, July 29, 1617. FR. BACON.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE acquainted his Majesty with your letter, who, in this business of Sir John Bennet's (r), hath altogether followed your Lordship's direction.

His Majesty hath at length been pleased to dispatch Mr. Lowder (s), according to your Lordship's desire, for the place in Ireland. What the cause of the stay was, I shall impart to your Lordship, when I see you, being now too long to relate.

His Majesty hath not yet had leisure to read the little book you send me to present unto him; but, as soon as I see the fittest opportunity, I will offer it to him again.

His Majesty, God be thanked, is very well; and I am exceeding glad to hear of your health, that you

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(r) of Godstow in Oxfordshire, who was sent to Brussels to the Archduke, to expostulate with him concerning a Libel on the King, imputed to Erycius Puteanus, and intitled, Iacii Cusan- boni Corona Regia.

(s) He had been Solicitor to the Queen; but finding her dislike of him, he was willing to part with his place for that of one of the Barons of the Exchequer in Ireland; for which he was recommended by the Lord Keeper to the Earl of Buckingham, in a letter dated at Whitehall, May 25, 1617.
are of so good term-proof, which is the best of it, being you are in those businesSES put most to the trial, which I wish may long continue in that strength, that you may still do his Majesty and your country that good service, whereof we hear so general approbation, that it much rejoiceth me, who rest

Your Lordship's ever at command,

Falkland, the 5th of July, 1617.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the King (t).

May it please your most excellent Majesty,

I DO very much thank your Majesty for your letter, and think myself much honoured by it. For though it contain some matter of dislike, in which respect it hath grieved me more than any event, which hath fallen out in my life: yet because I know apprehensions from the best masters to the best servants are necessary; and that no chastisement is pleasant for the time, but yet worketh good effects; and for that I find intermixed some passages of trust and grace; and find also in myself inwardly sincerity of intention, and conformity of will, howsoever I may have erred; I do not a little comfort myself, resting upon your Majesty's accustomed favour; and most humbly desiring, that any one of my particular notions may be expounded by the constant and direct course, which, your Majesty knoweth, I have ever held in your service.

And because it hath pleased your Majesty, of your singular grace and favour, to write fully and freely

(t) This letter appears, from the indorsement of the King's answer to it, to have been written at Gorhambury, July 25, 1617. That printed with this date in his Works, should be August 2, 1617, as I find by the original draught of it.
unto me; it is duty and decorum in me not to write shortly to your Majesty again, but with some length; not so much by way of defence or answer, which yet, I know, your Majesty would always graciously admit; as to shew, that I have, as I ought, weighed every word of your Majesty's letter.

First, I do acknowledge, that this match of Sir John Villiers is *magnum in parvo* in both senses, that your Majesty speaketh. But your Majesty perceiveth well, that I took it to be in a farther degree, *majus in parvo*, in respect of your service. But since your Majesty biddeth me to confide upon your act of empire, I have done. For, as the Scripture faith, *to God all things are possible*; so certainly, to wise Kings much is possible. But for that second sense, that your Majesty speaketh of, *magnum in parvo*, in respect of the stir; albeit it being but a most lawful and ordinary thing, I most humbly pray your Majesty to pardon me, if I signify to you, that we here take the loud, and vocal, and, as I may call it, streperous carriage to have been far more on the other side, which indeed is inconvenient, rather than the thing itself.

Now for the manner of my affection to my Lord of Buckingham, for whom I would spend my life, and that, which is to me more, the cares of my life; I must humbly confess, that it was in this a little parent-like (this being no other term, than his Lordship hath heretofore vouchsafed to my counsels;) but in truth (and it please your Majesty) without any grain of disesteem of his Lordship's discretion. For I know him to be naturally a wise man, of a sound and ftaid wit, as I ever said unto your Majesty. And again, I know he hath the best tutor in Europe. But yet I was afraid, that the height of his fortune might make him too secure; and, as the proverb is, a looker-on sometimes feeth more than a gamester.

For
For the particular part of a true friend, which your Majesty witnesseth, that the Earl hath lately performed towards me, in palliating some errors of mine; it is no new thing with me to be more and more bound to his Lordship; and I am most humbly to thank (whatever it was) both your Majesty and him; knowing well, that I may, and do commit many errors, and must depend upon your Majesty's gracious countenance and favour for them, and shall have need of such a friend near your Majesty. For I am not so ignorant of mine own case, but that I know I am come in with as strong an envy of some particulars, as with the love of the general.

For my opposition to this business, which, it seemeth, hath been informed your Majesty, I think it was meant (if it be not a thing merely feigned, and without truth or ground) of one of these two things; for I will dissemble nothing with your Majesty. It is true, that in those matters, which, by your Majesty's commandment and reference, came before the table concerning Sir Edward Coke, I was sometimes sharp (it may be too much;) but it was with end to have your Majesty's will performed; or else, when me thought he was more peremptory than became him, in respect of the honour of the table. It is true also, that I disliked the riot or violence, whereof we of your council gave your Majesty advertisement by our joint letter; and I disliked it the more, because he justified it to be law, which was his old song. But in that act of council, which was made thereupon, I did not see but all my Lords were as forward as myself, as a thing most necessary for preservation of your peace, which had been so carefully and firmly kept in your absence. And all this had a fair end, in a reconciliation made by Mr. Attorney (y), whereby both husband and wife and child

(y) Sir Henry Yelverton.
should have kept together. Which, if it had continued, I am persuaded the match had been in better and fairer forwardness, than now it is.

Now for the times of things, I beseech your Majesty to understand that, which my Lord of Buckingham will witness with me, that I never had any word of letter from his Lordship of the business, till I wrote my letter of advice; nor again, after my letter of advice, till five weeks after, which was now within this sennight. So that although I did in truth presume, that the Earl would do nothing without your Majesty's privity; yet I was in some doubt, by this his silence of his own mind, that he was not earnest in it, but only was content to embrace the officious offers and endeavors of others.

But, to conclude this point, after I had received, by a former letter of his Lordship, knowledge of his mind, I think Sir Edward Coke himself, the last time he was before the Lords, might particularly perceive an alteration in my carriage. And now that your Majesty hath been pleased to open yourself to me, I shall be willing to further the match by any thing, that shall be desired of me, or that is in my power.

And whereas your Majesty conceiveth some dregs of spleen in me by the word Mr. Bacon; truly it was but to express in thankfulness the comparative of my fortune unto your Majesty, the author of the latter, to shew how little I needed to fear, while I had your favour. For, I thank God, I was never vindicative nor implacable.

As for my opinion of prejudice to your Majesty's service, as I touched it before, I have done; I do humbly acquiesce in your Majesty's satisfaction, and rely upon your Majesty's judgement, who unto judgement have also power, so to mingle the elements, as may conserve the fabric.
For the interest, which I have in the mother, I do not doubt but it was increased by this, that I in judgement, as I then stood, affected that, which she did in passion. But I think the chief obligation was, that I stood so firmly to her in the matter of her assurance, wherein I supposed I did your Majesty service, and mentioned it in a memorial of council-business, as half craving thanks for it. And sure I am now, that, and the like, hath made Sir Edward Coke a convert, as I did write to your Majesty in my last.

For the collation of the two spirits, I shall easily subscribe to your Majesty's answer; for Solomon were no true man, if in matter of malice the woman should not be the superior.

To conclude, I have gone through, with the plainness of truth, the parts of your Majesty's letter; very humbly craving pardon for troubling your Majesty so long; and most humbly praying your Majesty to maintain me in your grace and favour, which is the fruit of my life upon the root of a good conscience. And although time in this business have cast me upon a particular, which, I confess, may have probable show of passion or interest; yet God is my witness, that the thing, that most moved me, was an anxious and solicitous care of your Majesty's state and service, out of consideration of the time past and present.

God ever preserve and bless your Majesty, and send you a joyful return after your prosperous journey.

King to the Lord Keeper, in answer to his Lordship's Letter from Gorbambury of July 25, 1617.

JAMES R.

Right trusty and well-beloved Counsellor, we greet you well.
Although our approach doth now begin to be near London, and that there doth not appear any great necessity of answering your last letter, since we are so shortly to be at home; yet we have thought good to make some observations to you upon the same, that you may not err, by mistaking our meaning.

The first observation we are to make is, that, whereas you would invert the second sense, wherein we took your *magnum in parvo*, in accounting it to be made *magnum* by their st router carriage, that were for the match, we cannot but shew you your mistaking therein. For every wrong must be judged by the first violent and wrongous ground, whereupon it proceeds. And was not the thefteous stealing away of the daughter from her own father (*u*) the first ground, whereupon all this great noise hath since proceeded? For the ground of her getting again came upon a lawful and ordinary warrant, subscribed by one of our council (*w*), for redress of the former violence: and except

(*u*) Lady Hatton had first removed her daughter to Sir Edmund Withipole's house, near Oatlands, without the knowledge of Sir Edward Coke; and from thence, according to a letter of Mr. Chamberlain, dated July 19, 1617, the young lady was privately conveyed to a house of the Lord of Argyle's by Hampton-Court.

"Whence, adds Mr. Chamberlain, her father, with a warrant " from Mr. Secretary [Winwood] fetched her; but indeed went " farther than his warrant, and brake open divers doors before " he got her."

(*w*) Secretary Winwood, who, as Mr. Chamberlain observes in the letter cited in the note above, was treated with ill language at the council-board by the Lord Keeper, and threatened with a *premumire*, on account of his warrant granted to Sir Edward Coke. His Lordship, at the same time, told the Lady Compton, mother of the Earl of Buckingham, that they wish'd well to her and her sons, and would be ready to serve the Earl with all true affection; whereas others did it out of *faction* and *ambition*. Which words glancing directly at Secretary Winwood, he alleged, that what he had done was by the direction of the Queen and the other parties, and shewed a letter of approbation of all his course from the King, making the whole table judge
except the father of a child might be proved to be
either lunatic, or idiot, we never read in any law,
that either it could be lawful for any creature to steal
his child from him; or that it was a matter of noise
and streperous carriage for him to hunt for the re-
covery of his child again.

Our next observation is, that whereas you protest
your affection to Buckingham, and thereafter confess,
that it is in some sort parent-like; yet, after that you
have praised his natural parts, we will not say, that
you throw all down by a direct imputation upon him;
but we are sure you do not deny to have had a greater
jealousy of his discretion, than, so far as we conceive,
he ever deferred at your or any man's hands. For
you say, that you were afraid, that the height of his
fortune might make him too secure; and so, as
a looker-on, you might sometime see more than a
gamester. Now we know not how to interpret this
in plain English otherwise, than that you were afraid,
that the height of his fortune might make him mis-
know himself. And surely, if that be your parent-
like affection toward him, he hath no obligation to
you for it. And, for our part, besides our own
proof, that we find him farthest from that vice of
any courtier; that ever we had so near about us; so
do we fear, that you shall prove the only phenix in
that jealousy of all the kingdom. For we would be
very sorry, that the world should apprehend that
conceit of him. But we cannot conceal, that we
think it was least your part of any to enter into that

what passion or ambition appeared in his carriage: to which no
answer was returned. The Queen, some time after, taking notice
of the displeasure, which the Lord Keeper had conceived against Se-
cretary Winwood, and asking his Lordship, what occasion the Sec-
retary had given him to oppose himself so violently against him,
his Lordship answered, "Madam, I can say no more but he is.
"proud, and I am proud." MS. letter of Mr. Chamberlain,
October 11, 1717.
jealousy of him, whom of we have heard you oft speak in a contrary style. And as for that error of yours, which he lately palliated, whereof you seem to pretend ignorance; the time is so short since you commended to him one (x) to be of the Barons of our Exchequer in Ireland, as we cannot think you to be so short of memory, as to have forgotten how far you undertook in that business, before acquainting us with it; what a long journey you made the poor man undertake, together with the slight recommendation you sent of him; which drove us to those straits, that both the poor man had been undone, and your credit a little blasted, if Buckingham had not, by his importunity, made us both grant you more than suit (for you had already acted a part of it,) and likewise run a hazard of the hindrance of our own service, by preferring a person to so important a place, whom you so lightly recommended.

Our third observation is upon the point of your opposition to this business, wherein you either do, or at least would seem to, mistake us a little. For first, whereas you excuse yourself of the oppositions you made against Sir Edward Coke at the council-table, both for that, and other causes; we never took upon us such a patroncy of Sir Edward Coke, as if he were a man not to be meddled withall in any case. For whatsoever you did against him, by our employment and commendation, we ever allowed it, and still do, for good service on your part. De bonis operibus non lepidamus vos. But whereas you talk of the riot and violence committed by him, we wonder you make no mention of the riot and violence of them, that stole away his daughter, which was the first ground of all that noise, as we said before. For a man may be compelled by manifest wrong beyond

(x) Mr Lowder. See the letter of the Earl of Buckingham of the 5th of July.
his patience; and the first breach of that quietness, which hath ever been kept since the beginning of our journey, was made by them, that committed the theft. And for your laying the burden of your opposition upon the council, we meddle not with that question; but the opposition, which we justly find fault with you, was the refusal to sign a warrant for the father to the recovery of his child, clad with those circumstances (as is reported) of your flight carriage to Buckingham's mother, when she repaired to you upon so reasonable an errand. What farther opposition you made in that business, we leave it to the due trial in the own time. But whereas you would distinguish of times, pretending ignorance either of our meaning or his, when you made your opposition; that would have served for a reasonable excuse not to have furthered such a business, till you had been first employed in it: but that can serve for no excuse of crossing any thing, that so nearly concerned one, whom you profess such friendship unto. We will not speak of obligation; for surely we think, even in good manners, you had reason not to have crossed any thing, wherein you had heard his name used, till you had heard from him. For if you had willingly given your consent and hand to the recovery of the young gentlewoman; and then written both to us and to him what inconvenience appeared to you to be in such a match; that had been the part indeed of a true servant to us, and a true friend to him. But first to make an opposition; and then to give advice by way of friendship, is to make the plow go before the horse.

Thus leaving all the particulars of your carriage, in this business, to the own proper time, which is ever the discoverer of truth, we commend you to God. Given under our signet at Nantwich, in the fifteenth year of our reign of Great Britain, &c.
To the Lord Keeper.

My Lord,

I have received your Lordship's letter by your man; but having lately imparted my mind to you in my former letters, I refer your Lordship to those letters, without making a needless repetition, and rest

Your Lordship's at command,

Aston, the 25th of Aug. 1617.  
G. Buckingham.

To my honourable Lord, Sir Francis Bacon, Knight, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal of England.

Sir Henry Yelverton, Attorney General, to the Lord Keeper Bacon.

My most worthy and honourable Lord,

I dare not think my journey lost, because I have with joy seen the face of my master, the King, though more clouded towards me than I looked for.

Sir Edward Coke hath not forborne, by any engine, to heave at your Honour, and at myself; and he works by the weightiest instrument, the Earl of Buckingham, who, as I see, sets him as close to him as his shirt, the Earl speaking in Sir Edward's praise, and, as it were, menacing in his spirit.

My Lord, I emboldened myself to assay the temper of my Lord of Buckingham to myself, and found it very fervent, misled by information, which yet I find he embraced as truth, and did nobly and plainly tell me, he would not secretly bite; but whoever had had any interest, or tafted of the opposition to his brother's
brother's marriage, he would as openly oppose them to their faces, and they should discern what favour he had, by the power he would use.

In the passage between him and me, I stood with much confidence upon these grounds:

First, that neither your Lordship, nor myself, had any way opposed, but many ways had furthered, the fair passage to the marriage.

Secondly, that we only wished the manner of Sir Edward's proceedings to have been more temperate, and more nearly resembling the Earl's sweet disposition.

Thirdly, that the chiefest check in this business was Sir Edward himself, who listened to no advice, who was so transported with passion, as he purposely declined the even way, which your Lordship and the rest of the Lords left both him, his Lady, and his daughter, in.

Fourthly, I was bold to stand upon my ground; and so I said I knew your Lordship would, that these were flanders, which were brought him of us both; and that it stood not with his honour to give credit to them.

After I had passed these straits with the Earl, leaving him leaning still to the first relation of envious and odious adversaries, I ventured to approach his Majesty, who graciously gave me his hand to kiss, but intermixed with all, that I deserved not that favour, if three or four things were true, which he had to object against me. I was bold to crave his princely justice; first, to hear, then to judge; which he graciously granted, and said, he wished I could clear myself. I answered, I would not appeal to his mercy in any of the points, but would endure the severest censure, if any of them were true. Whereupon he said, he would reserve his judgement till he heard me; which could not be then, his other occasions pressed him so much. All this was in the hear-
ing of the Earl; and I protest, I think the confidence in my innocency made me depart half justified; for I likewise kissed his Majesty's hand at his departure; and though out of his grace he commanded my attendance to Warwick, yet upon my suit he easily inclined to give me the choice, to wait on him at Windsor, or at London.

Now, my Lord, give me leave, out of all my affections, that shall ever serve you, to intimate touching yourself:

1. That every courtier is acquainted, that the Earl professeth openly against you, as forgetful of his kindness, and unfaithful to him in your love, and in your actions.

2. That he returneth the shame upon himself, in not listening to counsel, that dissuaded his affection from you, and not to mount you so high, not forbearing in open speech (as divers have told me, and this bearer, your gentleman, hath heard also) to tax you, as if it were an inveterate custom with you, to be unfaithful to him, as you were to the Earls of Essex and Somerset.

3. That it is too common in every man's mouth in court, that your greatness shall be abated; and as your tongue hath been as a razor to some, so shall theirs be to you.

4. That there is laid up for you, to make your burden the more grievous, many petitions to his Majesty against you.

My Lord, Sir Edward Coke, as if he were already upon his wings, triumphs exceedingly; hath much private conference with his Majesty; and in public doth offer himself, and thrust upon the King, with as great boldness of speech, as heretofore.

It is thought, and much feared, that at Woodstock he will again be recalled to the council-table; for neither are the Earl's ears, nor his thoughts, ever off him.

Sir
Sir Edward Coke, with much audacity, affirmeth his daughter to be most deeply in love with Sir John Villiers; that the contract pretended with the Earl of Oxford is counterfeit; and the letter also, that is pretended to come from the Earl.

My noble Lord, if I were worthy, being the meanest of all to interpose my weakness, I would humbly desire,

1. That your Lordship fail not to be with his Majesty at Woodstock. The sight of you will fright some.

2. That you single not yourself from the other Lords; but justify the proceedings as all your joint acts; and I little fear but you pas conqueror.

3. That you retort the clamour and noise in this business upon Sir Edward Coke, by the violence of his carriage.

4. That you seem not dismayed, but open yourself bravely and confidently, wherein you can excell all subjects; by which means I know you shall amaze some, and daunt others.

I have abused your Lordship's patience long; but my duty and affection towards your Lordship shall have no end: but I will still wish your Honour greater, and rest myself

Your Honour's servant,

Daventry, Sept. 3,
1617.
HENRY YELVERTON.

I beseech your Lordship burn this letter.

To the Right Honourable his singular good Lordship,
the Lord Keeper of the Great Seal.

To the Lord Keeper.

My Lord,

I HAVE received so many letters lately from your Lordship, that I cannot answer them severally: but the ground of them all being only this, that your Lordship
Lordship feareth I am so incensed against you, that I will hearken to every information, that is made unto me; this one letter may well make answer unto them all. As his Majesty is not apt to give ear to any idle report against men of your place; so, for myself, I will answer, that it is far from my disposition to take any advantage in that kind. And for your Lordship’s unkind dealing with me in this matter of my brother’s, time will try all. His Majesty hath given me commandment to make this answer in his name to your letter to him, that he needeth not to make any other answer to you, than that, which in that letter you make to yourself, that you know his Majesty to be so judicious, that whatsoever he heareth, he will keep one ear open to you. Which being indeed his own princely disposition, you may be assured of his gracious favour in that kind.

I will not trouble your Lordship with any longer discourse at this time, being to meet you so shortly, where will be better trial of all, that hath passed, than can be made by letters. So I rest

Your Lordship’s at command,

Warwick, Sept. 5 [1617].

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Right Honourable Sir Francis Bacon, Knight, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal of England.

Advice to the KING, for reviving the commission of suits.

THAT, which for the present I would have spoken with his Majesty about, was a matter, wherein time may be precious, being upon the tenderest point of all others. For though the particular occasion
occasion may be despised (and yet nothing ought to be despised in this kind,) yet the counsel thereupon I conceive to be most found and necessary, to avoid future perils.

There is an examination taken within these few days by Mr. Attorney, concerning one Baynton, or Baynham (for his name is not yet certain,) attested by two witnesses, that the said Baynton, without any apparent shew of being overcome with drink, otherwise than so as might make him less wary to keep secrets, said, that he had been lately with the King, to petition him for reward of service; which was denied him. Whereupon it was twice in his mind to have killed his Majesty. The man is not yet apprehended, and said by some to be mad, or half-mad; which, in my opinion, is not the least dangerous; for such men commonly do most mischief; and the manner of his speaking import no distraction. But the counsel I would out of my care ground hereupon, is, that his Majesty would revive the commission for suits, which hath been now for these three years, or more, laid down. For it may prevent any the like wicked cogitations, which the devil may put into the mind of a roarer or swaggerer upon a denial; and besides, it will free his Majesty from much importunity, and save his coffers also. For I am sure, when I was a commissioner, in three whole years space there passed scarce ten suits, that were allowed. And I doubt now, upon his Majesty's coming home from this journey, he will be much troubled with petitions and suits; which maketh me think this remedy more seasonable. It is not meant, that suits generally should pass that way, but only such suits, as his Majesty would be rid on.

Indorfed,

September 21, 1617.

To revive the commission of suits. For the King.

The
The Earl of Buckingham to the Lord Keeper,
Sir Francis Bacon (z).

My Lord,

I HAVE made his Majesty acquainted with your note concerning that wicked fellow’s speeches, which his Majesty contemneth, as is usual to his great spirit in these cases. But, notwithstanding, his Majesty is pleased, that it shall be exactly tried, whether this foul-mouthed fellow was taken either with drunkenness or madness, when he spake it. And as for your Lordship’s advice for setting up again the commissioners for suits, his Majesty faith, there will be time enough for thinking upon that, at his coming to Hampton-Court.

But his Majesty’s direction, in answer of your letter, hath given me occasion to join hereunto a discovery upon the discourse you had with me this day (a). For I do freely confess, that your offer of submission unto me, and in writing, if so I would have it, battered so the unkindness, that I had conceived in my heart for your behaviour towards me in my absence, as out of the sparks of my old affection towards you, I went to find his Majesty’s intention towards you, specially in any public meeting; where I found, on the one part, his Majesty so little satisfied with your late answer unto him, which he counted (for I protest I use his own terms) confused and childish, and his rigorous resolution, on the other part, so fixed, that he would put some public exemplary mark upon you; as I protest the sight of his deep-conceived in-

(z) This seems to be the letter, to which the Lord Keeper returned an answer, September 22, 1617, printed in his works.

(a) at Windsor, according to Sir Antony Weldon, who may perhaps be believed in such a circumstance as this. See Court and Character of King James I, p. 122.
dignation quenched my passion, making me upon the instant change from the person of a party into a peace-maker; so as I was forced upon my knees to beg of his Majesty, that he would put no public act of disgrace upon you. And as, I dare say, no other person would have been patiently heard in this suit by his Majesty but myself; so did I (though not without difficulty) obtain thus much, that he would not so far disable you from the merit of your future service, as to put any particular mark of disgrace upon your person. Only thus far his Majesty protesteth, that upon the conscience of his office he cannot omit (though laying aside all passion) to give a kindly reprimand, at his first sitting in council, to so many of his counsellors, as were then here behind, and were actors in this business, for their ill behaviour in it. Some of the particular errors committed in this business he will name, but without accusing any particular persons by name.

Thus your Lordship seeth the fruits of my natural inclination. I protest, all this time past it was no small grief unto me to hear the mouth of so many, upon this occasion, open to load you with innumerable malicious and detracting speeches, as if no music were more pleasing to my ear, than to rail of you: which made me rather regret the ill nature of mankind, that, like dogs, love to set upon them, that they see snatched at.

And, to conclude, my Lord, you have hereby a fair occasion, so to make good hereafter your reputation, by your sincere service to his Majesty, as also by your firm and constant kindness to your friends, as I may (your Lordship's old friend) participate of the comfort and honour, that will thereby come to you. Thus I rest at last

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

G. B.

L

The
The force of your old kindness hath made me set down this in writing unto you, which some, that have deserved ill of me in this action, would be glad to obtain by word of mouth, though they be far enough from it, for ought I yet see. But I beseech your Lordship to reserve this secretly to yourself only, till our meeting at Hampton-Court, lest his Majesty should be highly offended, for a cause that I know.

Indorsed,
A letter of reconciliation from Lord Buckingham, after his Majesty's return from Scotland.

To the Earl of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

It may please your Lordship to let his Majesty understand, that I have spoken with all the Judges, signifying to them his Majesty's pleasure touching the commendams. They all una voce did re-affirm, that his Majesty's powers, neither the power of the Crown, nor the practised power by the Archbis-hop, as well in the commendam ad recipiendum, as the commendam ad retinendum, are intended to be touched; but that the judgement is built upon the particular defects and informalities of this commendam now before them. They received with much comfort, that his Majesty took so well at their hands the former stay, and were very well content and desirous, that when judgement is given, there be a faithful report made of the reason thereof.

The accounts of the summer-circuits, as well as that of the lent-circuit, shall be ready against his Majesty's coming. They will also be ready with some account of their labours concerning Sir Edward Coke's Reports: wherein I told them his Majesty's meaning
meaning was, not to disgrace the person, but to rectify the work, having in his royal contemplation rather posterity than the present.

The two points touching the peace of the middle shires, I have put to a consult with some selected Judges.

The cause of the Egertons I have put off, and shall presently enter into the treaty of accord, according to his Majesty's commandment, which is well tasted abroad in respect of his compassion towards those ancient families.

God ever preserve and prosper your Lordship, according to the faithful and fervent wishes of

Your Lordship's true friend,

and devoted servant,

York-house, Octo-
ber 11, 1617. Fr. Bacon.

To the Earl of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I HAVE reformed the ordinance according to his Majesty's corrections, which were very material. And for the first of phrasis non placet, I understand his Majesty, nay farther, I understand myself, the better for it. I send your Lordship therefore fix privy seals; for every court will look to have their several warrant. I send also two bills for letters patents to the two reporters: and for the persons, I send also four names, with my commendations of those two, for which I will answer upon my knowledge. The names must be filled in the blanks; and so they are to be returned.
For the business of the Court of Wards, your Lordship's letter found me in the care of it. Therefore, according to his Majesty's commandment, by you signified, I have sent a letter for his Majesty's signature. And the directions themselves are also to be signed. These are not to be returned to me, lest the secret come out; but to be sent to my Lord of Wallingford, as the packets use to be sent.

I do much rejoice to hear of his Majesty's health and good disposition. For me, though I am incessantly in business, yet the re-integration of your love maketh me find all things easy.

God preserve and prosper you.

Your Lordship's true friend,
and devoted servant,

York-house, October 18, 1617. 

FR. BACON.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE delivered the Judges advice, touching the middle shires, unto his Majesty, who liketh it very well. As for the point of law, his Majesty will consider of it at more leisure, and then send you his opinion thereof. And so I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Hinchinbrooke,
the 22d of October, 1617.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

His Majesty hath spent some time with Sir Lionel Cranfield about his own business, wherewith he acquainted his Majesty. He hath had some conference with your Lordship, upon whose report to his Majesty of your zeal and care of his service, which his Majesty accepteth very well at your hands, he hath commanded Sir L. Cranfield to attend your Lordship, to signify his farther pleasure for the furtherance of his service; unto whose relation I refer you. His Majesty's farther pleasure is, you acquaint no creature living with it, he having resolved to rely upon your care and trust only.

Thus, wishing you all happiness, I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

October 26, 1617.

G. Buckingham.

Sir Francis Englefyld (b) to the Lord Keeper.

Give me leave, I beseech your Lordship, for want of other means, by this paper to let your Lordship understand, that notwithstanding I rest in no

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7096.
(b) This gentleman was very unfortunate in his behaviour, with regard to those, who had the great seal; for in Hilary Term of the year 1624, he was fined 3000l. by the Star-Chamber, for casting an imputation of bribery on the Lord Keeper Williams, Bishop of Lincoln. MS. Letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, dated at London, 1624. Sir Francis
no contempt, nor have to my knowledge broken any order made by your Lordship concerning the trust, either for the payment of money, or assignment of land; yet, by reason of my close imprisonment, and the unusual carriage of this cause against me, I can get no council, who will in open court deliver my case unto your Lordship. I must therefore humbly leave unto your Lordship's wisdom, how far your Lordship will, upon my adversary's fraudulent bill exhibited by the wife without her husband's privity, extend the most powerful arm of your authority against me, who desire nothing but the honest performance of a trust, which I know not how to leave, if I would. So, nothing doubting but your Lordship will do what appertaineth to justice, and the eminent place of equity your Lordship holdeth, I must, since I cannot understand from your Lordship the cause of my late close restraint, rest, during your Lordship's pleasure,

Your Lordship's close prisoner in the Fleet,

October 28, 1617.

FR. ENGLEFYLD.

Francis had been committed to the Fleet for a contempt of a decree in Chancery; upon which he was charged, by Sir John Bennett, with having said before sufficient witness, "that he "could prove this holy Bishop Judge had been bribed by some, "that fared well in their causes." A few days after the sen- tence in the Star-Chamber, the Lord Keeper sent for Sir Francis, and told him, he would refute his foul asperions, and prove upon him, that he scorned the pelf of the world, or to exact, or make lucre of any man: and that for his own part, he forgave him every penny of his fine, and would crave the same mercy towards him from the King. Bishop Hacket's Life of Archbishop Williams, Part I. p. 83, 84.
To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE thought good to renew my motion to your Lordship, in the behalf of my Lord of Huntingdon, my Lord Stanhope, and Sir Thomas Gerard; for that I am more particularly acquainted with their desires; they only seeking the true advancement of the charitable uses, unto which the land, given by their grandfather, was intended: which, as I am informed, was meant by way of a corporation, and by this means, that it might be settled upon the school-master, usher, and poor, and the coheirs to be visitors. The tenants might be conscionably dealt withall; and so it will be out of the power of any feoffees to abuse the trust; which, it hath been lately proved, have been hitherto the hindrance of this good work. These coheirs desire only the honour of their ancestor’s gift, and with the money, misemployed and ordered to be paid into court by Sir John Harper, may rather be bestowed by your Lordship’s discretion for the augmentation of the foundation of their ancestors, than by the censure of any other. And so I rest

Your Lordship’s servant,

Theobalds, November 12.

G. Buckingham.

Indorsed, 1617.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

THOUGH I had resolved to give your Lordship no more trouble in matters of controversy depending before you, with what importance soever

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7066.
my letters had been; yet the respect I bear unto this gentleman hath so far forced my resolution, as to recommend unto your Lordship the suit, which, I am informed by him, is to receive a hearing before you on Monday next, between Barneby Leigh and Sir Edward Dyer, plaintiffs, and Sir Thomas Thynne (c), defendant; wherein I desire your Lordship's favour on the plaintiffs so far only, as the justice of their cause shall require. And so I rest.

Your Lordship's faithful servant,

Newmarket, the 15th of Nov.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

Indorsed, 1617.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

THE certificate being returned upon the commission touching Sir Richard Haughton's aluminines, I have thought fit to desire your Lordship's furtherance in the business, which his Majesty (as your Lordship will see by his letter) much affecteth as a bargain for his advantage, and for the present relief of Sir Richard Haughton. What favour your Lordship shall do him therein, I will not fail to acknowledge, and will ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful servant,

G. BUCKINGHAM.

Indorsed, Received November 16, 1617.

(c) eldest son of Sir John Thynne, Knight, who died November 21, 1604. This Sir Thomas's younger son by his first wife, Mary, daughter of George, Lord Audley, was father of Thomas Thynne, Esq; assassinated by the followers of Count Camingmark, February 12, 1683.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE acquainted his Majesty with your Lordship's letter, who liketh well of the Judges opinion you sent unto him, and hath pricked the Sheriff of Buckinghamshire in the roll you sent, which I return signed unto your Lordship.

His Majesty takes very well the pains you have taken in sending to Sir Lionel Cranfield; and desirith you to send to him again, and to quicken him in the business.

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

G. Buckingham.

His Majesty liketh well the course taken about his household, wherewith he would have your Lordship, and the rest of his council, to go forward.

Newmarket, the 17th of November, 1617.

Indorsed,

My Lord of Buckingham shewing his Majesty's approbation of the courses held touching the household.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

UNDERSTANDING, that Thomas Hukeley, a merchant of London, of whom I have heard a good report, intendeth to bring before your Lordship in Chancery a cause depending between him, in the right of his wife, daughter of William

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 706. 

Auften,
Auften, and one John Horsemendon, who married another daughter of the said Auften; I have thought fit to desire your Lordship to give the said Thomas Hukeley a favourable hearing, when his cause shall come before you; and so far to respect him for my sake, as your Lordship shall see him grounded upon equity and reason; which is no more than, I assure myself, your Lordship will grant readily, as it is desired by

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

G. BUCKINGHAM,

Indorfed, November 17, 1617.

To the Earl of BUCKINGHAM (d).

My very good Lord,

THE last letter of my Lords, whereof the conclusion indeed is a little blunt, as the King calleth it, was concluded in my absence, which hath been but once since I came to this town; and brought me by the Clerk of the Council, as I sat in Chancery. Whereupon I retired to a little closet I have there, and signed it, not thinking fit to fever.

For my opinion, I disphatched it the morrow following. And till Sir Lionel Cranfield (e) be able to,

(d) In answer to his Lordship's letter from Newmarket, November 19, 1617, printed in Lord Bacon's works.

(e) He was originally a merchant in the city of London, introduced to the King's knowledge by the Earl of Northampton, and into his service by the Earl of Buckingham, being the great projector for reforming the King's household, advancing the customs, and other services; for which he was made Lord Treasurer, Baron Cranfield, and Earl of Middlesex; but being accused by the house of commons for misdemeanors in his office, he had a severe sentence passed upon him by the Lords in 1624.

execute
execute his part in the sub-commission, it will, in
my opinion, not be so fit to direct it. He crept to
me yesternight, but he is not well. I did his Ma-
jefty's message to him touching the tobacco; and he
faid he would give his Majesty very real and solid sa-
tisfaction touching the fame.
This is all for the present I fhall trouble your Lord-
ship withall, refting ever

Your Lordship's true friend,

and devoted fervant,

November 20, 1617.

Fr. Bacon.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

HIS Majesty liketh very well of the draught your
Lordship fent of the letter for the sub-com-
miffion, and hath figned it, as it was, without any
alteration, and fent it to the Lords. Which is all
I have to write at this time, but that I ever reft

Your Lordship's faithful friend and fervant,

Newmarket, the 2d
of Decemb. 1617.

G. Buckingham.

To the Lord Keeper (*).

My honourable Lord,

HIS Majesty hath been pleasèd to refer a petition
of one Sir Thomas Blackftones to your Lord-
ship, who being brother-in-law to a gentleman,
whom I much repect, Sir Henry Constable, I have,
at his request, yielded to recommend his business so far to your Lordship's favour, as you shall find his case to deserve compassion, and may stand with the rules of equity. And so I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Newmarket, the 4th of December.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

Indorsed, 1617.

To the Earl of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

YOUR Lordship may marvel, that together with the letter from the board, which, you see, passed so well, there came no particular letter from myself; wherein, though it be true, that now this very evening I have made even with the causes of Chancery, and comparing with the causes heard by my Lord (f), that dead is, of Michaelmas-term was twelvemonth, I find them to be double so many and one more; besides that the causes, that I dispatch, do seldom turn upon me again, as his many times did; yet nevertheless, I do assure your Lordship, that should have been no excuse to me, who shall ever assign both to the causes of the subject, yea, and to my health, but the leavings of times after his Majesty's business done. But the truth is, I could not speak with Sir Lionel Cranfield, with whom of necessity I was to confer about the names, till this afternoon.

First, therefore, I send the names, by his advice, and with mine own good allowance of those, which we with his Majesty should select; wherein I have had

(f) Chancellor Ellesmere.
respect somewhat to form, more to the avoiding of opposition, but most to the service.

Two most important effects his Majesty's letter hath wrought already: the one, that we perceive his Majesty will go through drift; which goeth to the root of our disease. The other, that it awaketh the particular officers, and will make their own endeavours and propositions less perfunctory, and more solid and true for the future. Somewhat is to be done presently, and somewhat by seasonable degrees. For the present, my advice is, his Majesty would be pleased to write back to the table, that he doth well approve, that we did not put back or retard the good ways we were in of ourselves; and that we understood his Majesty's right: that his late direction was to give help, and not hindrance, to the former courses; and that he doth expect the propositions we have in hand, when they are finished: and that for the sub-commissions, he hath sent us the names he hath chosen out of those by us sent and propounded; and that he leaveth the particular directions from time to time, in the use of the sub-commissioners, wholly to the table.

This I conceive to be the fairest way: first to seal the sub-commission without opening the nature of their employments, and without seeming, that they should have any immediate dependance upon his Majesty, but merely upon the table.

As for that, which is to be kept in breast, and to come forth by parts, the degrees are these:

First, to employ the sub-commissioners in the reconsidering of those branches, which the several officers shall propound.

Next, in taking consideration of other branches of retrenchment, besides those, which shall be propounded.

The third, to take into consideration the great and huge arrears and debts in every office; whether
there be cause to abate them upon deceit or abuse; and at least how to settle them best, both for the King's honour, and avoiding of clamour, and for the taking away, as much as may be, that fame ill influence and effect, whereby the arrear past destroys the good husbandry and reformation to come.

The fourth is to proceed from the consideration of the retrenchments and arrears to the improvements. All these four, at least the last three, I wish not to be stirred in till his Majesty's coming.

God ever preserve and prosper you.

Your Lordship's true friend, and devoted servant,

FR. BACON;

Your Lordship will be pleased to have a little care of the bestowing of this letter.

York-house, this 6th of December, 1617.

To the LORD KEEPER (*).

My honourable Lord,

EST Mr. Secretary (g) should be come away before the delivery of this packet, I have thought fit to direct it to your Lordship, with this letter to your Lordship about the Court of Wards, and another to the Lords from his Majesty. Which is all I have now to write, but that I ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Newmarket, the 7th of December, 1617.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

(g) Sir Thomas Lake. His colleague, Secretary Winwood, died October 27, 1617; and Sir Robert Naunton succeeded to the post of Secretary, January 8, 1613, from that of Surveyor of the Court of Wards.
To the Lord Keeper (*).  

My honourable Lord,  

I have acquainted his Majesty with your Lordship's letter, who hath followed your directions therein, and written to the Lords accordingly. Which is all I have now to write to your Lordship, but that I shall ever rest  

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,  

Newmarket, the 9th day of December, 1617.  

G. Buckingham.  

Indorsed,  

My Lord of Buckingham to your Lordship, shewing the King's liking of your opinion and choice of names for sub-commission.  

To the Earl of Buckingham.  

My very good Lord,  

Your Lordship's letters patents (b) are ready. I would be glad to be one of the witnesses at the delivery; and therefore, if the King and your Lordship will give me leave, I will bring it to-morrow at any hour shall be appointed.  

Your Lordship's ever,  

New-Year's eve, 1617.  

Fr. Bacon.  

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7066.  
(b) for the title of Marquis of Buckingham to himself and the male-heirs of his body.

I was
I was bold to send your Lordship, for your New-Year's gift, a plain cap of essay, in token, that if your Lordship in any thing shall make me your sayman, I will be hurt before your Lordship shall be hurt. I present therefore to you my best service, which shall be my All-Years gift.

To the Earl of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

Sir George Chaworth and I am agreed, so that now I shall retain the grace of my place, and yet he rewarded. The King hath no ill bargain; for he hath four times as much as he was offered by Sir George of increase; and yet I take upon me to content my servants, and to content him. Nevertheless, I shall think myself pleased by his Majesty, and do acknowledge, that your Lordship hath dealt very honourably and nobly with me.

I send inclosed a letter, whereby your Lordship signifieth his Majesty's pleasure to me; and I shall make the warrant to Mr. Attorney. I desire it may be carried in privateness. I ever rest

Your Lordship's true friend;

and devoted servant,

This New-Year's
eve, 1617: 

FR. BACON.

To Sir James Pullerton (i).

I presume to send his Highness this pair of small candlesticks, that his light, and the light of his posterity, upon the church and commonwealth,

(i) He had been Surveyor of the Lands to Prince Charles, when Duke of York; and was Groom of the Stole to him, when King. He died in January, 1653.
may never fail. I pray you do me the favour to present it to his Highness, with my best and humblest service.

Your most affectionate and assured friend,

Fr. Bacon, C. S.

To the Lord Chancellor (k).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE heretofore recommended unto your Lordship the determination of the cause between Sir Rowland Egerton and Edward Egerton (l), who, I understand, did both agree, being before your Lordship, upon the values of the whole lands. And as your Lordship hath already made so good an entrance into the business, I doubt not but you will be as noble in furthering the full agreement between the parties: whereunto, I am informed, Sir Rowland Egerton is very forward, offering on his part that, which to me seemeth very reasonable, either to divide the lands, and his adverse party to choose; or the other to divide, and he to choose. Whereupon my desire to your Lordship is, that you would accordingly make a final end between them, in making a division, and setting forth the lands, according to the values agreed upon by the parties themselves. Wherein, besides the charitable work your Lordship shall do in making an end of a controversy between those, whom

(k) Sir Francis Bacon had that title given him January 4.
(l) This was one of the causes mentioned in the charge of the House of Commons against the Lord Bacon; in his answer to which, he acknowledged, that some days after perfecting his award, which was done with the advice and consent of the Lord Chief Justice Hobart, and publishing it to the parties, he received 300l. of Mr. Edward Egerton, by whom, soon after his coming to the seal, he had likewise been presented with 400l. in a purse.
name and blood should tie together, and keep in unity, I will acknowledge your favour as unto myself, and will ever rest

Your Lordship’s faithful servant,

Theobalds, the 9th of January, 1617.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

His Majesty having given order to Mr. Solicitor (m) to acquaint your Lordship with a business touching ale-houses (n), that upon consideration thereof you might certify your opinion unto his Majesty, whether it be fit to be granted or not; I have thought fit to desire your Lordship to give it what favour and furtherance you may, if you find it reasonable, and not prejudicial to his Majesty’s service, because it concerneth Mr. Patrick Maule, and my brother, Christopher Villiers, whose benefit I have reason to wish and advance by any just courses. And so I rest

Your Lordship’s faithful servant,

Roydon, the 11th of Jan. 1617.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006. (m) Sir Thomas Coventry.

(n) The Lord Chancellor, in his letter to the Marquis of Buckingham, dated January 25, 1617, printed in his works, has the following passage: “For the suit of the ale-houses, which concerneth your brother, Mr. Christopher Villiers, and Mr. Patrick Maule, I have conferred with my Lord Chief Justice and Mr. Solicitor thereupon, and there is a scruple in it, that it should be one of the grievances put down in parliament: which if it be, I may not, in my duty and love to you, advice you to deal in it; if it be not, I will mould in the best manner, and help it forward.” A patent for licensing ale-houses being afterwards granted to Sir Giles Mompesson and Sir Francis Mitchel, and greatly abused by them, they were punished for those abuses by the parliament, which met January 30, 1627.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

SIR John Cotton (o) having acquainted me with a petition he intended to exhibit to his Majesty, that, without any apparent fault committed by him, he was put from his office of Custos Rotulorum; I have persuaded him to forbear the presenting of his petition until I had written to your Lordship, and received your answer. I have therefore thought fit to signify unto your Lordship, that he is a gentleman, of whom his Majesty maketh good esteem, and hath often occasion to use his service: and therefore, besides that he is a man of good years, and hath served long in the place, I know his Majesty, out of these respects, will be loth he should receive any disgrace. I desire therefore to understand from your Lordship the reasons of his remove, that, if I cannot give satisfaction to the gentleman himself, I may at least make answer to his Majesty for that act of your Lordship's, which is alleged to be very unusual, unless upon some precedent misdemeanour of the party. Thus, having in this point discharged my part in taking the best course I could, that no complaint should come against you to the King, I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend,

Newmarket, the 16th of January, 1617.

G. Buckingham.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(o) of Landwade, in Cambridgeshire, Knight. He served many years as knight of the shire for that county, and died in 1620, at the age of seventy-seven. His eldest son, Sir John Cotton, was created a Baronet, July 14, 1641.
To Sir Henry Yelverton, Attorney General.

Mr. Attorney,

WHEREAS there dependeth before me in Chancery a great cause of tythes concerning the benefices of London, though in a particular, yet, by consequence, leading to a general; his Majesty, out of a great and religious care of the state, both of church and city, is graciously pleased, that before any judicial sentence be pronounced in Chancery, there be a commission directed unto me, the Lord Chancellor, Lord Treasurer, the Lord Privy-Seal, and the Lord Chamberlain; and likewise to the Lord Archbishop, the Lord Bishop of Winchester (p), and the Bishop of Ely (q), and also to the Master of the Rolls (r), the two Lord Chief Justices (s), Justice Dodderidge, and Justice Hutton, who formerly assisted me in the cause, to treat of some concord in a reasonable moderation between the ministers and the Mayor and the commonalty of London in the behalf of the citizens; and to make some pact and transact between them by consent, if it may be; or otherwise to hear and certify their opinions touching the cause, that thereupon his Majesty may take such farther order, by directing of a proceeding in Chancery, or by some other course, as to his wisdom shall seem fit.

You will have care to draw the commission with some preface of honour to his Majesty, and likewise to insert in the beginning of the commission, that it

(p) Dr. James Montagu.  
(q) Dr. Lancelot Andrews.  
(r) Sir Julius Caesar.  
(s) Sir Henry Montagu of the King's Bench, and Sir Henry Hobart of the Common Pleas.
was de advisamento cancellarii (as it was indeed) left it should seem to be taken from the court. So I commit you to God's &c.

January 19, 1617.

Fr. Bacon, Canc.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I do not easily fail towards gentlemen of quality to disgrace them. For I take myself to have some interest in the good wills of the gentlemen of England, which I keep and cherish for his Majesty's special service. And for this gentleman, of whom you write, Sir John Cotton, I know no cause in the world, why I should have displaced him, but that it was certified unto me, that it was his own desire to resign: wherein if I was abused, I will restore him. But if he did consent, and, now it is done, changeth his mind, then I would be loth to disgrace the other, that is come in. Therefore I pray your Lordship, that I may know and be informed from himself what passed touching his consent; and I will do him reason.

Thus, with my thanks to your Lordship, I will ever rest

Your Lordship's true friend,

and most devoted servant,

January 20, 1617.

Fr. Bacon, Canc.

Indorsed,

To the Marquis of Buckingham, concerning Sir John Cotton's resigning the place of Custos Rotulorum of Cambridgeshire.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I THANK your Lordship for your favour to Sir George Tipping, in giving liberty unto him to make his appearance before you after the holy-days, at my request; who, as I understand by some friends of mine, who moved me to recommend him to your Lordship's favour, is willing to conform himself in performance of the decree made in the Chancery by your Lordship's predecessor, but that he is persuaded, that presently, upon the performance thereof, his son will make away the land, that shall be conveyed unto him: which being come to Sir George from his ancestors, he desireth to preserve to his posterity. I desire your Lordship's farther favour therefore unto him, that you will find out some course, how he may be exempted from that fear of the sale of his lands, whereof he is ready to acknowledge a fine to his son, and to his heirs by Anne Pigot; and, they failing, to his son's heirs males, and, for want thereof, to any of his son's or brethren's heirs males, and so to the heirs general of his father and himself by lineal descent, and the remainder to the crown. This offer, which seemeth very reasonable, and for his Majesty's advantage, I desire your Lordship to take into your consideration, and to shew him what favour you may for my sake; which I will readily acknowledge, and ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful servant,

Newmarket, the 23d of January, 1617.

G. Buckingham.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

SINCE I received your Lordship's letter, Sir Lionel Cranfield being here, hath informed his Majesty of the whole proceeding in his business of the household; which his Majesty liketh very well, and is glad it is approved by your Lordship, of whose care and pains therein he receiveth very good satisfaction.

In the business touching Sir John Cotton, your Lordship dealeth as nobly as can be desired; and so, if it should come in question before his Majesty, I would answer in your behalf. I leave Sir John Cotton to inform your Lordship by his letter of the business, and ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful servant,

Newmarket, the 24th of January, 1617.

G. Buckingham.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE been intreated by a gentleman, whom I much respect, to recommend to your Lordship's favour Mr. John Huddy, between whom and Mr. Richard Huddy there is, as I am informed, a cause to be heard before your Lordship in the Chancery on Saturday next. My desire unto your Lordship is, that you would shew the said John Huddy what favour you lawfully may, and as his cause will bear,

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 706.

M 4

when
when it cometh before you, for my sake. Which I
will not fail to acknowledge, ever resting

Your Lordship’s faithful servant,

Newmarket, the 23th of January, 1617.               G. BUCKINGHAM,

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I UNDERSTAND, that his Majesty hath been
pleased to refer a suit unto him by two of his serv-
ants, Robert Maxwell and John Hunt, for the
making of Sheriffs and Escheators patents, to your
Lordship’s consideration. My desire unto your
Lordship on their behalf is, that you would shew
them thus much favour for my sake, as with as
much expedition, as may be, and your Lordship’s
other occasions may permit, to certify your opinion
thereof unto his Majesty; which I will be ready to
acknowledge, and ever rest

Your Lordship’s faithful servant,

Newmarket, the 4th day of February, 1617.               G. BUCKINGHAM,

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

THOUGH I had resolved not to write to your
Lordship in any matter between party and
party; yet at the earnest request of my noble friend,
the Lord Norris, to whom I account myself much be-

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7cc6.
holden, I could not but recommend unto your Lordship's favour a special friend of his, Sir Thomas Monk, who hath a suit before your Lordship in the Chancery (t) with Sir Robert Basset; which, upon the report made unto me thereof, seemeth so reasonable, that I doubt not but the cause itself will move your Lordship to favour him, if, upon the hearing thereof, it shall appear the same unto your Lordship, as at the first sight it doth unto me. I therefore desire your Lordship to shew in this particular what favour you lawfully may, for my sake, who will account it as done unto myself; and will ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful servant,

Newmarket, the 4th day of Feb. 1617. G. Buckingham,

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I HAVE sent inclosed a letter to his Majesty about the public charge I am to give the last Star-Chamber day, which is this day sevennight, to the Judges and Justices before the circuits. I pray deliver it to his Majesty with speed. I send also some papers appertaining to that business, which I pray your Lordship to have in readiness, if his Majesty call for them. I ever rest

Your Lordship's true friend,

and devoted servant,

February 6, 1617. Fr. Bacon, Canc.

(t) Lord Bacon was afterwards accused by the House of Commons of having received of Sir Thomas Monk 100 pieces; which he did not deny, but alleged, that it was after the suit was ended.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

His Majesty marvelleth, that he heareth nothing of the business touching the gold and silver thread (u); and therefore hath commanded me to write unto your Lordship to haften the dispatch of it; and to give him as speedy an account thereof as you can. And so I rest

Your Lordship's faithful servant,

Newmarket, 7th of February.

G. Buckingham.

Indorsed, 1617.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I understand by this bearer, Edward Hawkins, how great pains your Lordship hath taken in the business, which I recommended to you concerning him, and how favourably your Lordship hath used him for my sake. For which I give your Lordship many thanks, and will be ever ready to acknowledge your favour toward him by all the testimonies of

Your Lordship's faithful friend,

Theobalds, the 12th of February, 1617.

G. Buckingham.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

(u) A patent for the monopoly of which was granted to Sir Giles Mompesson and Sir Francis Mitchel, who were punished for the abuse of that patent by the parliament, which met January 30, 1620.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE acquainted his Majesty with your letter, who liketh well of the course you mention in the end of your letter, and will speak with you farther of it at his return to London. In the mean time, he would have your Lordship give direction to the Master of the Rolls (x) and Mr. Attorney (y) to stay the examination. And so I rest

Your Lordship's most assured
to do you service,

Hampton-Court, the 18th of March,
1617.

G. Buckingham.

To the Lord Chancellor of Ireland (z).

My Lord Chancellor,

I WILL not have you account the days of my not answering your letter. It is a thing imposed upon the multitude of my business to lodge many things faithfully, though I make no present return.

Your conjunction and good understanding with the Deputy (a) I approve and commend; for I ever loved intire and good compositions, which was the old physic, better than fine separations.

Your friendly attributes I take as effects of affection; which must be causes of any good offices, wherewith I can requite you.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(x) Sir Julius Caesar.
(y) Sir Henry Yelverton.
(z) Dr. Thomas Jones, Archbishop of Dublin, who died April 10, 1619.
(a) Sir Oliver St. John, afterwards Viscount Grandison. He died at Battersea in Surrey, December 29, 1639, aged seventy.
LETTERS; &c. of

We conceive that kingdom is in growth. God send soundness to the increase; wherein I doubt not but your Lordship will do your part. God keep you.

Your Lordship's very loving friend,

York-house, April 15, 1618.
FR. BACON, Can.

To the Lord Chief Justice of Ireland (b).

My Lord Chief Justice,

I thank you for your letter, and assure you, that you are not deceived, neither in the care I have of the public in that state, nor in my good wishes, and the effects thereof, when it shall lie in my power towards yourself.

I am glad to receive your testimony of my Lord Deputy, both because I esteem your judgement, and because it concurreth with my own.

The materials of that kingdom, which is trade and wealth, grow on pace. I hope the form, which giveth the best living of religion and justice, will not be behind, the rather by you, as a good instrument. I rest

Your Lordship's assured friend,

York-house * of April, 1618.
FR. BACON, Can.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

Understanding, that there is a suit depending before your Lordship between Sir

(b) Sir William Jones, to whom, upon his being called to that post, the Lord Keeper made a speech, printed in his works.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

Rowland
Rowland Cotton (c), plaintiff, and Sir John Gawen, defendant, which is shortly to come to a hearing; and having been likewise informed, that Sir Rowland Cotton hath undertaken it in the behalf of certain poor people; which charitable endeavour of his, I assure myself, will find so good acceptance with your Lordship, that there shall be no other use of recommendation: yet, at the earnest request of some friends of mine, I have thought fit to write to your Lordship in his behalf, desiring you to shew him what favour you lawfully may, and the cause may bear, in the speedy dispatch of his business; which I shall be ever ready to acknowledge, and rest

Your Lordship's most devoted to serve you,

Whitehall, the 20th day of Apr. 1618.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I W I L L not go about to excuse mine own fault,
by making you believe his Majesty was backward
in your business; but upon the first motion, he gave
me directions for it; which it was my negligence,
as I freely confess, that I have no sooner performed,

(c) a gentleman eminent for his learning, especially in the Hebrew language, in which he had been instructed by the famous Hugh Broughton, who died in 1612. He was son of Mr. William Cotton, citizen and draper of London, and had an estate at Bellaport in Shropshire, where he resided, till he came to live at London at the request of Sir Allen Cotton, his father's younger brother, who was Lord Mayor of that city in 1625. Sir Rowland was the first patron of the learned Dr. Lightfoot, and encouraged him in the prosecution of his studies of the Hebrew language and antiquities.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
having not been slack in moving his Majesty, but in dispatching your man. All is done, which your Lordship desired, and I will give order, according to his Majesty's directions, so that your Lordship shall not need to trouble yourself any farther, but only to expect the speedy performance of his Majesty's gracious pleasure.

I will take the first opportunity to acquaint his Majesty with the other business, and will ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Theobalds, the 8th of May [1618].

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable good Lord,

WHEREAS in Mr. Hansbye's cause (d), which formerly, by my means, both his Majesty and myself recommended to your Lordship's favour, your Lordship thought good, upon a hearing thereof, to decree some part for the young gentleman, and to refer to some Masters of the Chancery, for your farther satisfaction, the examination of witnesses to this point; which seemed to your Lordship to be the main thing your Lordship doubted of, whether or no the leaves, conveyed by old Hansbye to young Hansbye by deed, were to be liable to the legacies, which he

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

(d) This seems to be one of the causes, on account of which Lord Bacon was afterwards accused by the House of Commons; in answer to whose charge he admits, that in the cause of Sir Ralph Hansbye there being two decrees, one for the inheritance, and the other for goods and chattels; some time after the first decree, and before the second, there was 500l. delivered to him by Mr. Tobie Matthew; nor could his Lordship deny, that this was upon the matter pendente lite.
gave by will; and that now I am credibly informed, that it will appear upon their report, and by the depositions of witnesses, without all exception, that the said leaves are no way liable to those legacies: these shall be earnestly to intreat your Lordship, that upon consideration of the report of the masters, and depositions of the witnesses, you will, for my sake, shew as much favour and expedition to young Mr. Hansbye in this cause, as the justness thereof will permit. And I shall receive it at your Lordship's hands as a particular favour.

So I take my leave of your Lordship, and rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Greenwich, the 12th of June, 1618.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

UNDERSTANDING, that the cause depending in the Chancery between the Lady Vernon and the officers of his Majesty's household is now ready for a decree; though I doubt not, but, as his Majesty hath been satisfied of the equity of the cause on his officers behalf, who have undergone the business, by his Majesty's command, your Lordship will also find their cause worthy of your favour: yet I have thought fit once again to recommend it to your Lordship, desiring you to give them a speedy end of it, that both his Majesty may be freed from farther importunity, and they from the charge and trouble of following

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

it:
it: which I will be ever ready to acknowledge as a
favour done unto myself, and always rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Greenwich, the
15th day of
June, 1618.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the LORD CHANCELLOR (*).

My honourable Lord,

I WROTE unto your Lordship lately in the be-
half of Sir Rowland Cotton, that then had a suit
in dependance before your Lordship and the rest of
my Lords in the Star-Chamber. The cause, I un-
derstand, hath gone contrary to his expectation; yet
he acknowledges himself much bound to your Lord-
ship for the noble and patient hearing he did then re-
ceive; and he rests satisfied, and I much beholden
to your Lordship, for any favour it pleased your Lord-
ship to afford him for my cause. It now rests only
in your Lordship's power for the assessing of costs;
which, because, I am certainly informed, Sir Rowland
Cotton had just cause of complaint, I hope your
Lordship will not give any against him. And I do
the rather move your Lordship to respect him in it,
because it concerns him in his reputation, which I
know he tenders, and not the money, which might
be imposed upon him; which can be but a trifle.
Thus presuming of your Lordship's favour herein,
which I shall be ready ever to account to your Lord-
ship for, I rest

Your Lordship's most devoted to serve you,

June 19, 1618.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

WHEREAS it hath pleased his Majesty to recommend unto your consideration a petition exhibited by Mr Fowle, together with the grievances and request for the rectifying of the work of gold and silver thread; and now understandeth, that your Lordship hath called unto you the other commissioners in that case, and spent some time to hear what the opposers could object, and perceiveth by a relation of a good entrance you have made into the business; and is now informed, that there remaineth great store of gold and silver thread in the merchants hands, brought from foreign parts, besides that, which is brought in daily by stealth, and wrought here by underhand workers; so that the agents want vent, with which inconveniences, it seemeth the ordinary course of law cannot so well meet: and yet they are inforced, for freeing of clamour, to set great numbers of people on work; so that the commodity lying dead in their hands, will in a very short time grow to a very great sum of money: To the end therefore, that the undertakers may not be disheartened by these wrongs and losses, his Majesty hath commanded me to write unto your Lordship, to the end you might bestow more time this vacation in prosecuting the course you have so worthily begun, that all differences being reconciled, the defects of the commission may be also amended, for prevention of farther abuses therein; so as the agents may receive encouragement to

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7606.
go on quietly in the work without disturbance. And I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

From Bewly, the 20th day of Aug. 1618.  G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Chancellor.

Most honourable Lord,

HEREWITHALL I presumed to send a note inclosed, both of my business in Chancery, and with my Lord Roos, which it pleased your Lordship to demand of me, that so you might better do me good in utroque genere. It may please your Lordship, after having perused it, to commend it over to the care of Mr. Meautys for better custody.

At my parting last from your Lordship, the grief I had to leave your Lordship's presence, though but for a little time, was such, as that being accompanied with some small corporal indisposition, that I was in, made me forgetful to say that, which now for his Majesty's service. I thought myself bound not to silence. I was credibly informed and assured, when the Spanish Ambassador went away, that howsoever Ralegh and the prentices (r) should fall out to be proceeded withall, no more instances would be made hereafter on the part of Spain for justice to be done ever in these particulars: but that if slackness were

(r) who on the 12th of July, 1618, had insulted Gondomar, the Spanish Ambassador, on account of a boy's being hurt by him as he was riding. [Camdeni Annales Regis Jacobi I. p. 33.] They were proceeded against by commissioners at Guildhall on Wednesday the 12th of August following; seven being found guilty, and adjudged to six months imprisonment, and to pay 500L. a piece. Two others were acquitted. MS. letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, London, August 15, 1618.
tised here, they would be laid up in the deck, and
would serve for materials (this was the very word)
of future and final discontentments. Now as the
humour and design of some may carry them towards
troubling of the waters; so I know your Lordship's
both nature and great place require an appeasing them
at your hands. And I have not presumed to say
this little out of any mind at all, that I may have,
to meddle with matters so far above me, but out of
a thought I had, that I was tied in duty to lay thus
much under your Lordship's eye; because I know
and consider of whom I heard that speech, and with
how grave circumstances it was delivered.
I beseech Jesus to give continuance and increase to
your Lordship's happiness; and that, if it may stand
with his will, myself may one day have the honour
of casting some small mite into that rich treasury.
So I humbly do your Lordship reverence, and con-
tinue

The most obliged of your Lordship's
many faithful servants,

Nottingham, this 21st
of August, 1618.

Tobie Matthew.

To Mr. (afterwards Sir) Isaac Wake, his Ma-
jefty's Agent at the court of Savoy.

Mr. Wake,

I HAVE received some letters from you; and
hearing from my Lord Cavendish (f) how well
he affects you, and taking notice also of your good abili-
ties and services in his Majesty's affairs, and not for-
getting the knowledge I had, when young, of your

(f) William Cavendish, son and heir of William, created
Baron Cavendish Hardwicke in Derbyshire, in May 1605, and
Earl of Devonshire, July 12, 1618.

N 2 good
LETTERS, &c. of good father (g), I thought myself in some measure tied not to keep from you my good opinion of you, and my desire to give you any furtherance in your fortunes and occasions, whereof you may take knowledge and liberty to use me for your good. Fare you well.

Your very loving friend,

York-houfe, this 1st of Sept. 1618.

FR. VERULAM (b), Canc.

To the LORD CHANCELLOR (*).

My honourable Lord,

HIS Majesty is desirous to be satisfied of the fitness and conveniency of the gold and silver thread-business; as also of the profit, that shall any way accrue unto him thereby. Wherefore his pleasure is, that you shall, with all convenient speed, call unto you the Lord Chief Justice of the King’s Bench (i), the Attorney General (k), and the Solicitor (l); and consider with them of every of the said particulars, and return them to his Majesty, that thereupon he may resolve what present course to take for the advancement of the execution thereof. And so I rest.

Your Lordship’s faithful servant,

Theobalds, the 4th of Octob. 1618.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

(g) Arthur Wake, Rector of Billing in Northamptonshire, Master of the Hospital of St. John in Northampton, and Canon of Christ-Church, Oxford.

(b) He had been created Lord Verulam on the 12th of July, 1618.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

(i) Sir Henry Montagu. (k) Sir Henry Yelverton.

(l) Sir Thomas Coventry.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE been desired by some friends of mine, in the behalf of Sir Francis Englefield, to recommend his cause so far unto your Lordship, that a peremptory day being given by your Lordship's order for the perfecting of his account, and for the assignment of the trust, your Lordship would take such course therein, that the gentleman's estate may be redeemed from farther trouble, and secured from all danger, by engaging those, to whom the trust is now transferred by your Lordship's order, to the performance of that, whereunto he was tied. And so not doubting but your Lordship will do him what lawful favour you may herein, I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

G. Buckingham.

Indorsed, Received October 14, 1618.

To the King, concerning the form and manner of proceeding against Sir Walter Ralegh (m).

May it please your most excellent Majesty,

According to your commandment given unto us, we have, upon divers meetings and conferences, considered what form and manner of proceeding against Sir Walter Ralegh might best stand with your Majesty's justice and honour, if you shall be pleased, that the law shall pass upon him.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(m) He was beheaded October 29, 1618, the day of the inauguration of the Lord Mayor of London.
And, first, we are of opinion, that Sir Walter Raleigh being attainted of high-treason (which is the highest and last work of law,) he cannot be drawn in question judicially for any crime or offence since committed. And therefore we humbly present two forms of proceeding to your Majesty: the one, that together with the warrant to the Lieutenant of the Tower (if your Majesty shall so please) for his execution, to publish a narrative in print of his late crimes and offences; which, albeit your Majesty is not bound to give an account of your actions in these cases to any but only to God alone, we humbly offer to your Majesty's consideration, as well in respect of the great effusion of time since his attainder, and of his employment by your Majesty's commission, as for that his late crimes and offences are not yet publicly known. The other form (whereunto, if your Majesty so please, we rather incline) is, that where your Majesty is so renowned for your justice, it may have such a proceeding, as is nearest to legal proceeding; which is, that he be called before the whole body of your Council of State, and your principal Judges, in your Council-Chamber; and that some of the nobility and gentlemen of quality be admitted to be present to hear the whole proceeding, as in like cases hath been used. And after the assembly of all these, that some of your Majesty's Counsellors of State, that are best acquainted with the case, should openly declare, that this form of proceeding against Sir Walter is holden, for that he is civilly dead. After this your Majesty's council learned to charge his acts of hostility, depredation, abuse as well of your Majesty's commission, as of your subjects under his charge, impostures, attempt of escape, and other his misdemeanors. But for that, which concerns the French, wherein he was rather passive than active, and without which the charge is complex, we humbly refer to your Majesty's consideration,
tion, how far that shall be touched. After which charge so given, the examinations read, and Sir Walter heard, and some to be confronted against him, if need be, then he is to be withdrawn and sent back; for that no sentence is, or can be, given against him. And after he is gone, then the Lords of the Council and Judges to give their advice to your Majesty, whether in respect of these subsequent offences, upon the whole matter, your Majesty, if you so please, may not with justice and honour give warrant for his execution upon his attainder. And of this whole proceeding we are of opinion, that a solemn act of council should be made, with a memorial of the whole presence. But before this be done, that your Majesty may be pleased to signify your gracious direction herein to your Council of State; and that your Council learned, before the calling of Sir Walter, should deliver the heads of the matter, together with the principal examinations touching the same, wherewith Sir Walter is to be charged, unto them, that they may be perfectly informed of the true state of the case, and give their advice accordingly. All which nevertheless we, in all humbleness, present and submit to your princely wisdom and judgment, and shall follow whatsoever it shall please your Majesty to direct us herein, with all dutiful readiness.

Your Majesty's most humble,
York-house, this 18th of October, 1618.
and faithful servants, &c.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

WHEREAS there is a cause depending in the court of Chancery between one Mr. Francis Foljambe and Francis Hornby, the which (* Harl. MSS. Vol. 706.
N 4 already
already hath received a decree, and is now to have another hearing before yourself; I have thought fit to desire you to shew so much favour therein, seeing it concerns the gentleman's whole estate, as to make a full arbitration and final end, either by taking the pains in ending it yourself, or preferring it to some other, whom your Lordship shall think fit: which I shall acknowledge as a courtesy from your Lordship; and ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Hinchinbrooke,
the 22d of October, 1618.

G. Buckingham.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I send the commission for making Lincoln's Inn-Fields into walks for his Majesty's signature. It is without charge to his Majesty.

We have had my Lord of Ormonde (n) before us. We could not yet get him to answer directly, whether he would obey the King's award or no. After we had endured his importunity and impertinences, and yet let him down to this, that his Majesty's award was not only just and within his submission, but in his favour; we concluded in few words,

(n) Walter, Earl of Ormonde, grandfather of James the first Duke of Ormonde. This Earl, upon the death of Thomas, Earl of Ormonde and Ossory, succeeding to those honours, should have inherited likewise the greatest part of the estate: but his right was contested by Sir Richard Preston Lord Dingwell, supported by the favour of King James I, who made an award, which Walter, Earl of Ormonde, conceiving to be unjust, refused to submit to, and was, by the King's order, committed to the Fleet, where he remained eight years before the death of that King; but in 1625 recovered his liberty.
that the award must be obeyed, and if he did refuse or impugn the execution of it in Ireland, he was to be punished by the justice of Ireland: if he did murmur or scandalize it here, or trouble his Majesty any more, he was to be punished in England. Then he asked, whether he might be gone. For that, we told him, his Majesty's pleasure was to be known.

Sir Robert Mansell hath promised to bring his summer account this day sev'nighth. God preserve and prosper you.

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

November 12, 1618.

FR. VERULAM, Cane.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I SEND your Lordship the commission signed by his Majesty, which he was very willing to dispatch as a business very commendable and worthy to be taken in hand.

For the Earl of Ormonde, his Majesty made no other answer, but that he hopeth he is not so unmannerly, as to go away without taking leave of his Majesty.

For Sir Robert Mansell's account, his Majesty faith he is very slow, especially being but a summery account, and that he promised to bring it in before: and therefore would have him tied to the day he hath now set, without any farther delay.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
This last his Majesty commanded me to put in after I had written and signed my letter.

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Roxton, the 13th of November, 1618.  G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

HAVING formerly moved your Lordship in the business of this bearer, Mr. Wyche, of whom, as I understand, your Lordship hath had a special care to do him favour, according to the equity of his cause; now seeing, that the cause is shortly to be heard, I have thought fit to continue my recommendation of the business unto you, desiring your Lordship to shew what favour you lawfully may unto Mr. Wyche, according as the justness of the cause shall require: which I will acknowledge as a courtesy from your Lordship, and ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Newmarket, the 18th of November, 1618.  G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I SEND your Lordship the bill of the Sheriff of Hereford and Leicester, pricked and signed by his Majesty, who hath likewise commanded me to send unto your Lordship these additions of instructions, sent unto him by the Surveyor and Receiver of the Court of Wards; wherein, because he knoweth not

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
what to prescribe without understanding what objections can be made, his pleasure is, that your Lord-
ship advise and consider of them, and fend him your opinion of them, that he may then take such course therein, as shall be fit.

His Majesty commanded me to give you thanks for your care of his service; and so I rest

Your Lordship's faithful servant,

Newmarket, 22d of November. G. Buckingham.

Indorfed, 1618.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

We have put the Declaration (o) touching Raleigh to the press with his Majesty's additions, which were very material, and fit to proceed from his Majesty.

For the prisoners, we have taken an account, given a charge, and put some particulars in examination for punishment and example.

For the pursuivants, we staid a good while for Sir Edward Coke's health; but he being not yet come abroad, we have entered into it; and we find faults, and mean to select cases for example: but in this swarm of priests and recusants we are careful not to discourage in general. But the punishment of some, that are notoriously corrupt, concerned not the good, and will keep in awe those, that are but indifferent.

(o) Declaration of the Demeanor and Carriage of Sir Walter Raleigh, Knight, as well in his Voyage, as in and since his return, &c. printed at London, 1618, in 4to.

The
The balance of the King's estate is in hand, whereof I have great care, but no great help. The sub-committees for the several branches of treasure are well chosen and charged. This matter of the King's estate for means is like a quarry, which digs and works hard; but then, when I consider it buildeth, I think no pains too much; and after term it shall be my chief care. For the Mint, by my next I will give account; for our day is Wednesday. God ever preserve and prosper you.

Your Lordship's

November 22, 1618.

FR. VERULAM, Caus.

Indorsed, Of council-business.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVING understood by Dr. Steward, that your Lordship hath made a decree against him in the Chancery, which he thinks very hard for him to perform; although I know it is unusual to your Lordship to make any alterations, when things are so far past: yet in regard I owe him a good turn, which I know not now how to perform but this way, I desire your Lordship, if there be any place left for mitigation, your Lordship would shew him what favour you may, for my sake, in his desires, which I shall be ready to acknowledge as a great courtely done unto myself; and will ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Newmarket, the 2d of Decemb. 1618.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

(* Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

To
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE written a letter unto your Lordship, which will be delivered unto you in behalf of Dr. Steward; and besides, have thought fit to use all freedom with you in that, as in other things; and therefore have thought fit to tell you, that he being a man of very good reputation, and a stout man, that will not yield to any thing, wherein he conceiveth any hard course against him, I should be sorry he should make any complaint against you. And therefore, if you can advise of any course, how you may be eased of that burden, and freed from his complaint, without shew of any fear of him, or any thing he can say, I will be ready to join with you for the accomplishment thereof: And so desiring you to excuse the long stay of your man, I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

From Newmarket, 3d of December, 1618. G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

YESTERNIGHT we dispatched the Lord Ridgeway's account. Good service is done. Seven or eight thousand pounds are coming to the King, and a good precedent set for accounts.

There came to the seal about a fortnight since a strange book passed by Mr. Attorney to one Mr. Hall; and it is to make subjects (for so is deniza-

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
LETTES, &c. of

tion,) and this to go to a private use, till some thousand pounds be made of it. The number one hundred denizens. And whereas all books of that nature had an exception of merchants (which importeth the King not much in his customs only, for that is provided for in the book, but many other ways) this takes in merchants and all. I acquainted the commissioners with it, and by one consent it is stayed. But let me counsel his Majesty to grant forth a commission of this nature, so to raise money for himself, being a flower of the crown: and Hall may be rewarded out of it; and it would be to principal persons, that it may be carried with election and discretion, whom to admit to denization, and whom not.

God ever bless and prosper you.

Your Lordship's most faithful,

and obliged friend and servant,

December 8, 1618.

FR. VERULAM, CANC.

To the LORD CHANCELLOR (*).

My honourable Lord,

I THANK your Lordship for the favour, which, I understand, Sir Francis Englefeld hath received from your Lordship upon my last letter, whereunto I desire your Lordship to add this one favour more (which is the same, that I understand your Lordship granted him at Christmas last) to give him liberty, for the space of a fortnight, to follow his business in his own person; whereby he may bring it to the more speedy end, putting in security, according to the ordinary course, to render himself prisoner again.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
as soon as that time is expired: which is all that I desire for him, and in which I will acknowledge your Lordship's favour towards him; and ever rest
Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,
Newmarket, the 10th
of December 1618.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,
I SEND you herewith the copy of a letter, which we, the commissioners for Ormonde's cause, have written to the Deputy of Ireland, according to his Majesty's pleasure signified by Sir Francis Blundell; which I humbly desire his Majesty would peruse, that, if it do not attain his meaning, as we conveyed it, we may second it with a new letter.

We have appointed Monday morning for these Mint businesses, referred by his Majesty to certain commissioners, and we will carry it sine brepitu.

The patent touching Guinea and Bynny for the trade of gold, stated first by myself, and after by his Majesty's commandment, we have now settled by consent of all parties.

Mr. Attorney, by my direction, hath made, upon his information exhibited into the Star-Chamber, a thundering motion against the transportation of gold by the Dutch; which all the town is glad of; and I have granted divers writs of ne exeat regnum, according to his Majesty's warrant.

Sir Edward Coke keeps in still, and we have mifs of him; but I supply it as I may by my farther diligence. God ever bless you and keep you.

Your Lordship's most faithful and bounden friend and servant,

December 11, 1618.

Fr. VERULAM, Cant.
I forget
I forget not your Doctor's (p) matter. I shall speak with him to-day, having received your Lordship's letter; and what is possible, shall be done. I pray pardon my scribbling in haste.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE acquainted his Majesty with your letters, who is very well pleased with your care of his service, in making stay of the grant of denizens upon the reason you alledge, whereof his Majesty will speak farther with you at his return.

The letter, which you sent me about my Lord of Ormonde's son, is not according to his Majesty's meaning; but I would have you frame another to my Lord Deputy to this purpose: "That his Majesty having seen a letter of his to Sir Francis Blundell, advertising, that the Earl of Ormonde's son, and some other of his kindred, did victual and fortify their houses; his Majesty hath thereupon commanded you to write unto him, that if the ground of his information be true (which he may best know,) that then he send for the said Earl's son, and the principal of his kindred, to appear before him: and if they appear, and give him satisfaction, it is well; but if they refuse to appear, or give him not satisfaction, though they appear; that then he assemble what forces he can, be they never so few, and go against them, that he may crush the rebellion in the egg."

I have remembered his Majesty, as I promised your Lordship, about the naming you for a commissioner to treat with the Hollanders: But besides that you have so many businesss, both of the Star-

(p) Steward's. See above, p. 183.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
Chamber, and others in the term-time, when this must be attended as well as in the vacation, whereby this would be either too great a toil to you, or a hindrance to his Majesty's service; he thinketh it could not stand with the honour of your place to be balanced with those, that are sent from the state, so far unequal to his Majesty, and being themselves none of the greatest of the state. Therefore his Majesty holdeth it not fit or worthy of you to put you into such an employment, in which none of your predecessors, or any of the chief Counsellors, have been ever used in this kind, but only in a treaty of marriage or conclusion of a peace; as when the Constable of Castile was here, when the commissioners on both sides had their authority under the great seal of either kingdom, with direct relation to their Sovereigns, far differing from this commission, which is now given to these men, and whereunto his Majesty is to frame the course of his. As for the part, which concerneth Scotland, the choice hath not been made of the Chancellor or Archbishop of St. Andrew's, but of men nearer the rank of those, that come hither to treat. As yet his Majesty delayeth to give any commission at all, because he would first be informed from the Lords, both of the points and form of their commission, which his Majesty hitherto understandeth to be, with authority to over-rule and direct their merchants in what they shall think fit; which if it be so, then his Majesty holdeth it fit, for his part, to appoint the whole body of the council with like power over his merchants. As for me, I shall be ever ready upon any occasion to shew myself

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Newmarket, the 14th of December, 1618.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

O To
To the Lady Clifford.

My good Lady and cousin, I shall not be wanting in any thing, that may express my good affection and wishes towards your Ladyship, being so near unto me, and the daughter of a father, to whom I was in the passages of my fortune much obliged. So with my loving commendations, in the midst of business, I rest

Your affectionate kinsman and assured friend,

York-house, this 25th of January, 1618. Fr. Verulam, Can. c

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord, let my often writing may make your Lordship conceive, that this letter hath been drawn from you by importunity, I have thought fit, for preventing of any such conceit, to let your Lordship know, that Sir John Wentworth, whose business I now recommend, is a gentleman, whom I esteem in more than an ordinary degree. And therefore I desire your Lordship to shew him what favour you can for my sake in his suit, which his Majesty hath referred to your Lordship: which I will acknowledge as a courtesy unto me, and rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Newmarket, January 26, 1618. G. Buckingham.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

To
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I BEING desired by a special friend of mine to recommend unto your Lordship's favour the case of this petitioner, have thought fit to desire you, for my sake, to shew him all the favour you may in this his desire, as you shall find it in reason to deserve; which I shall take as a courtesy from your Lordship, and ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

G. Buckingham.

I thank your Lordship for your favour to Sir John Wentworth, in the dispatch of his business.

Newmarket, March 15, 1618.

To the Lord Chancellor.

Most honourable Lord,

It may please your Lordship, there was with me this day one Mr. Richard White, who hath spent some little time at Florence, and is now gone into England. He tells me, that Galileo had answered your discourse concerning the flux and reflux of the sea, and was sending it unto me; but that Mr. White hindered him, because his answer was grounded upon a false supposition, namely, that there was in the ocean a full sea but once in twenty-four hours. But now I will call upon Galileo again. This Mr. White is a

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
discreet and understanding gentleman, though he seem a little soft, if not slow; and he hath in his hands all the works, as I take it, of Galileo, some printed, and some unprinted. He hath his discourse of the flux and reflux of the sea, which was never printed; as also a discourse of the mixture of metals. Those, which are printed, in his hand are these: the Nuncius sideraeus; the Maccbie solari, and a third Delle Cofe, che fianno fu l'acqua, by occasion of a disputation, that was amongst learned men in Florence about that, which Archimedes wrote, de insidentibus humido.

I have conceived, that your Lordship would not be sorry to see these discourses of that man; and therefore I have thought it belonging to my service to your Lordship to give him a letter of this date, though it will not be there so soon as this. The gentleman hath no pretence or business before your Lordship, but is willing to do your Lordship all humble service; and therefore, both for this reason, as also upon my humble request, I beseech your Lordship to bestow a countenance of grace upon him. I am beholden to this gentleman; and, if your Lordship shall vouchsafe to ask him of me, I shall receive honour by it. And I most humbly do your Lordship reverence.

Your Lordship's most obliged servant,

Brussels, from my bed, the 14th of April, 1619.

TOBIE MATTHEW.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

HIS Majesty hath commanded me to signify unto your Lordship, that it is his pleasure you put off the hearing of the cause between Sir Arthur

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.

Manwaring
Manwaring and Gabriel Dennis till toward the end of the term; because his Majesty is graciously pleased to be at the hearing thereof himself. And so I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Royton, April 13, 1619.

G. Buckingham.

To the Lord Chancellor, and Sir Lionel Tanfield, Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer (*).

My Lords,

His Majesty having been moved by the Duke of Savoy's Ambassador in the behalf of Philip Bernardi, whom he is to send about some special employment over the seas to the Duke of Savoy, that, before his going, the business mentioned in this petition may be ended, hath commanded me to recommend the same unto your Lordships care, that with all expedition the cause may be heard and ended by your Lordships, according to his Majesty's reference; or left to the determination of the Court of Chancery, where it is depending, and where the party assureth himself of a speedy end. And so I rest

Your Lordships very assured friend

at command,

Royton, the 19th of April, 1619.

G. Buckingham.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
My very good Lord,

I THINK fit to let your Lordship understand what passed yesterday in the Star-Chamber touching Suffolk's (p) business.

There came to me the Clerk of the Court in the inner chamber, and told me, that my Lord of Suffolk desired to be heard by his council at the * sitting of the court, because it was pen **** him.

I marvelled I heard not of it by Mr. Attorney, who should have let me know as much, that I might not be taken on the sudden in a cause of that weight.

I called presently Mr. Attorney to me, and asked him, whether he knew of the motion, and what it was, and how he was provided to answer it. He signified to me, that my Lord would desire to have the commission for examinations in Ireland to be returnable in Michaelmas term. I said, it might not be, and presently drew the council, then present, to me, and made Mr. Attorney repeat to them the passages past, and settled it, that the commission should be returnable the first day of the next term, and then republication granted, that it might, if accidents of wind and weather permit, come to hearing in the term. And upon motion in open court it was ordered accordingly.

(p) Thomas Howard, Earl of Suffolk, who had been made Lord Treasurer in 1614. He was accused of several misdemeanors in that office, together with his Lady, and Sir John Bingley, his Ladyship's agent; and an information preferred against them all in the Star-Chamber.

God
Lord Chancellor BACON.

God ever preserve and prosper you. I pray God this great easterly wind agree well with his Majesty.

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

May 6, 1619.

Fr. Verulam, Cana.

Indorsed, Sent by Sir Gilbert Houghton.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I AM much bounden to his Majesty, and likewise to your Lordship. I see, by the late accesves I have had with his Majesty, and now by his royal and real favour (g), that he loveth me, and acknowledgeth me for the servant, that I am, or desire to be. This in me must turn to a great alacrity to honour and serve him with a mind less troubled and divided. And for your Lordship, my affection may and doth daily receive addition, but cannot, nor never could, receive alteration. I pray present my humble thanks to his Majesty; and I am very glad his health confirmeth; and I hope to see him this summer at Goshambury: There is sweet air as any is. God preserve and prosper you both. I ever rest

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

May 9, 1619.

Fr. Verulam, Canc.

(g) probably the grant made to him about this time of 1200l. a year.
Minute of a Letter to the Count Palatine of the Rhine.

Monseigneur,

Je me tiens a grand honneur, qu'il plaise à votre Altesse de me connoistre pour tel, que je suis, ou pour le moins voudrois étre, envers vous et votre service: et m'estimeray heureux, si par mes Conseils auprés du Roy, ou autre devoir, je pourroy contribuer à votre grandeur, dont il semble que Dieu vous a bâti de belles occasions, ayant en contemplation votre tres-illustre personne, non seulement comme tres-cher allié de mon maistre, mais aussi, comme le meilleur appui, apres les Roys de Grande Bretagne, de la plus faine partie de la Chrestienté.

Je ne puis aussi passer sous silence la grande raison, que votre Altesse fait a votre propre honneur en choississant tels Conseilleurs et Ministres d'Etat, comme se monstre tres-bien estre Monsieur le Baron de Dhona et Monsieur de Pleffen, estants personages si graves, discrètes et habiles; en quoy votre jugement reluict assez.

Votre Altesse de votre grace excusera la faulte de mon language Francois, ayant été tant verifié es vieilles Loix de Normandie: mais le coeur supplera la plume, en priant Dieu de vous tenir en sa digne et faimée garde,

Monseigneur,

De votre Altesse le plus humble,

et plus affectionné serviteur.

Indorfed, May 13, 1619.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

His Majesty was pleased, at the suit of some, who have near relation to me, to grant a license for transportation of butter out of Wales unto one Lewis and Williams, who in consideration, that the patent should be passed in their names, entered into articles for the performance of certain conditions agreed upon between them, which, now that the patent is under the great seal, they utterly refuse to perform. My desire therefore to your Lordship is, that you would call the said Lewis and Williams before you, with the other parties, or some of them, who shall be ready at all times to attend your Lordship; and out of your consideration of the matter, according to equity, to take such course therein, that either the said agreement may be performed; or that they, which refuse it, may receive no benefit of the patent; which upon reason thereof was passed in their names. And herein I desire your Lordship to make what expedition you can; because now is the season to make provision of the butter, that for this year is to be transported, whereof they take advantage to stand out. And so I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Greenwich, May 14, 1619.

G. Buckingham.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

THOUGH it be nothing, and all is but duty; yet I pray shew his Majesty the paper inclosed, that his Majesty may see, how careful his poor servant is upon every emergent occasion to do him what honour he can. The motion made in court by the King's serjeant, Crew (q), that the declaration might be made parcell of the record, and that I hear otherwise of the great satisfaction abroad, encourageth me to let his Majesty know what passed.

God ever preserve and prosper you both.

Your Lordship's obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

FR. VERULAM, Canc.

Indorsed, June 29, 1619,
My Lord to my Lord Marquis, inclosing the form of a declaration used in point of acknowledgment in the Lady Exeter's (r) cause.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I PURPOSED to have seen you to day, and receive your commandments before the progress. But I came not to London till it was late, and found

(q) Sir Randolph Crew, made Chief Justice of the King's Bench, January 26, 1624.
(r) Countes of Exeter, accused of incest and other crimes by the Lady Lake, wife of Secretary Lake, and their daughter the Lady Roos.

you
you were gone before I came. Nevertheless, I would not fail to let your Lordship understand, that as I find every day more and more occasions, whereby you bind me to you; so this morning the King of himself did tell me some testimony, that your Lordship gave of me to his Majesty even now, when you went from him, of so great affection and commendation (for I must ascribe your commendation to affection, being above my merit) as I must do contrary to that, that painters do; for they desire to make the picture to the life, and I must endeavour to make the life to the picture, it hath pleased you to make so honourable a description of me. I can be but your's, and desire to better myself, that I may be of more worth to such an owner.

I hope to give the King a good account of my time this vacation.

If your Lordship pass back by London, I desire to wait on you, and discourse a little with you: if not, my prayers shall go progress with you, and my letters attend you, as occasion serveth.

God ever preserve and prosper you.

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

July 19, 1619.

FR. VERULAM, Can.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

THIS day, according to the first appointment, I thought to have waited upon his Majesty, and to have given him an account of my cares and preparations for his service, which is my progress. And therefore, since his coming to Windsor is pro-
longed, I thought to keep day by letter, praying your Lordship to commend my most humble service to his Majesty, and to let him know, that since I see his Majesty doth me the honour, as to rely upon my care and service, I lose no time in that, which may pertain thereunto. I see the straits, and I see the way out; and what lieth in one man, whom he hath made great, and trained, shall not be wanting. And I hope, if God give me life for a year or two, to give his Majesty cause to think of me seven years after I am dead.

I am glad the time approacheth, when I shall have the happiness to kiss his Majesty's hands, and to embrace your Lordship, ever resting,

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

York-house, Aug. 28, 1619.

FR. VERULAM, Canc.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

His Majesty, upon a petition delivered by Mr. Thomas Digby, wherein he complaineth of great wrongs done unto him, hath been pleaded, for his more speedy relief and redress, if it prove as he alledged, to refer the consideration thereof unto your Lordship. And because he is a gentleman, whom I have long known and loved, I could not but add my desire to your Lordship, that, if you find he hath been wronged, you would do him so much.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
favour, as to give him such remedy, as the equity of his case may require. For which I will ever rest

Your Lordship’s faithful friend and servant,

Royton, Octob. 8, 1619. G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE acquainted his Majesty with your letter, who hath given order to Mr. Secretary Calvert to signify his pleasure for the proceeding in that business, whereof you write, without any farther delay, as your Lordship will more fully understand by Mr. Secretary, who for that purpose is to return to London against the day of hearing.

I have no answer to make to your former letter, and will add no more to this, but that his Majesty hath a great confidence in your care of his service. And so I rest

Your Lordship’s faithful friend and servant,

Royton, Octob. 10, 1619. G. BUCKINGHAM.

Indorsed,

Shewing his Majesty’s acceptation of your Lordship’s care, in particular in the business against the Earl of Suffolk.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

After my last letter yesterday, we entered into conference, touching the Suffolk cause, myself, and the commissioners, and the two Chief Justices (s). The fruit of this conference is, that we all conceive the proceedings against my Lord himself to be, not only just and honourable, but in some principal parts plausible in regard of the public; as namely, those three points, which touch upon the ordnance, the army of Ireland, and the money of the cautionary towns; and the two Chief Justices are firm in it.

I did also in this cause, by the assent of my Lords, remove a part; for Mr. Attorney had laid it upon Serjeant Davies (t) to open the information, which is that, which gives much life or coldness to the cause. But I will have none but trained men in this cause; and I cannot forget, that the allotting of the opening of the information in this cause of the Dutch (I mean the main cause) to a mean fellow, one Hughes, did hurt, and was never well recovered.

By my next I will write of the King's estate: and I ever rest

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

October 14, 1619.

Fr. Verulam, Can.

(i) Sir Henry Montagu of the King's Bench, and Sir Henry Hobart of the Common Pleas.

(ii) Sir John Davies, author of Nofce trijsium, knighted in February, 1607, and made Serjeant at Law in 1612. He had been Attorney General of Ireland.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

This morning the Duke (u) came to me, and told me the King's cause was yesterday left fair; and if ever there were a time for my Lord of Suffolk's submission, it was now; and that, if my Lord of Suffolk should come into the court, and openly acknowledge his delinquency, he thought it was a thing considerable. My answer was, I would not meddle in it; and, if I did, it must be to dissuade any such course; for that all would be but a play upon the stage, if justice went not on in the right course. This I thought it my duty to let the King know by your Lordship.

I cannot express the care I have had of this cause in a number of circumstances and discretions, which, though they may seem but small matters, yet they do the business, and guide it right.

God ever keep your Lordship.

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

October 21, 1619.

Fr. Verulam, Canc.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I am doubly bounden to the King for his Majesty's trust and acceptance; whereof the one I will never deceive; the other, though I cannot deserve, yet

(u) Lodowick, Duke of Lennox. He was created Duke of Richmond, May 17, 1623; and died February 11, 1625.
I will do my best, and perhaps as much as another man.

This day the evidence went well; for the Solicitor did his part substantially: and, a little to warm the business, when the misemployment of treasure, which had relation to the army of Ireland, was handled, I speak a word, that he, that did draw or milk treasure from Ireland, did not emulgere, milk money, but blood. But this is but one of the little things, that I wrote of before.

The King, under pardon, must come hither with two resolutions; the one, to remit all importunity, touching this cause, to the Lords in Court of Justice; the other, to pursue the designs first taken at Windsor, and then at Hampton-Court, for his commission of treasury: wherein I do my part, and it is reasonably well; but better would it be, if instruments were not impediments. I ever rest

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

October 27, Wednesday.

Fr. Verulam, Canz.

Friday will not end the business; for to-morrow will but go through with the King's evidence.

To the Lord Chancellor(*).

My honourable Lord,

This bearer, a Frenchman belonging to the Ambassadour, having put an Englishman in suit for some matters between them, is much hindered

(*w) Sir Thomas Coventry, afterwards Lord Keeper of the Great Seal.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
and molested by often removing of the cause from one court to another. Your Lordship knows, that the French are not acquainted with our manner of proceedings in the law, and must therefore be ignorant of the remedy in such a case. His course was to his Majesty; but I thought it more proper, that your Lordship would be pleased to hear and understand this case from himself, and then to advise and take order for his relief, as your Lordship in your wisdom shall think fit. So commending him to your honourable favour, I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Roxton, 27th of October, 1619. G. Buckingham.

Your Lordship shall do well to be informed of every particular, because his Majesty will have account of it at his coming.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE acquainted his Majesty with your letter, who commanded me to give your Lordship thanks for your speed in advertising those things, that pass, and for the great care he feeth you ever have of his service.

I send your Lordship back the bill of Sheriffs for Sussex, wherein his Majesty hath pricked the first, as your Lordship wished.

His Majesty would not have you omit this opportunity of so gross an over-sight in the Judges, to admonish them of their negligence in suffering such a thing to come to his Majesty, which needed his

(*) Hall, MSS. Vol. 706.

amending
amending afterward: and withall, to let them know, that his Majesty observeth, that every year they grow more and more careless of presenting fit men unto him for that place; and that you advise them to be more wary hereafter, that they may give his Majesty better satisfaction. And so I rest.

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Royston, November 14, 1619.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

THIS day afternoon, upon our meeting in council, we have planed those rubs and knots, which were mentioned in my last, whereof I thought good presently to advertize his Majesty. The days hold without all question, and all delays diverted and quieted. Sir Edward Coke was at Friday's hearing, but in his night-cap; and complained to me, he was ambulant, and not current. I would be sorry he should fail us in this cause. Therefore I desire his Majesty to signify to him by your Lordship (taking knowledge of some light indisposition of his) how much he should think his service disadvantaged in this cause, if he should be at any day away; for then he cannot sentence.

By my next I will give his Majesty some account of the tobacco and the currants. I ever rest

Your Lordship's most obliged friend, and faithful servant,

November 20, at evening, 1619.

FR. VERULAM, Cane.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I know well his Majesty taketh to heart this business of the Dutch (x), as he hath great reason, in respect both of honour and profit. And because my first letter was written in the epitasis, or trouble of the business; and my second in the beginning of the catastrophe, or calming thereof, (wherein nevertheless I was fain to bear up strongly into the weather, before the calm followed) and since every day hath been better and better, I thought good to signify so much, that his Majesty may be less in suspense.

The great labour was to get entrance into the business; but now the portcullis is drawn up. And though, I must say, there were some blots in the tables, yet, by well playing, the game is good.

Rowland is passing well justified; for both his credit is by very constant and weighty testimony proved, and those vast quantities, which were thought incredible, or at least improbable, are now made manifest truth.

Yet I find a little of the old leaven towards the first defendants, carried in this style and character: "I would this, that appears now, had appeared at first. But this cometh of haste and precipitation;" and the like. But yet, I hope, the corruption and practice upon the ore tenus, and the rectifying of Rowland's credit, will satisfy my Lords upon the former proofs. For I would be very sorry, that these new defendants (which, except one or two, are the smaller flies) should be in the net, and the old

(x) Merchants, accused in the Star-Chamber for exporting the gold and silver coin.
defendants, which are the greater flies, should get through. God preserve you.

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

This November
26, 1619.

FR. VERULAM, CANC.

Indorsed, Touching the Dutch business.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I DO, from time to time, acquaint his Majesty with your letters, wherein he ever perceiveth your vigilant care in any thing, that concerneth his service; and hath commanded me to give you thanks in his name, who is sure your endeavours will never be wanting, when any thing is to be done for the advancement of his affairs.

According to your Lordship's advice, his Majesty hath written to the Commissioners of the Treasury, both touching the currants and the tobacco (y), the plantation whereof his Majesty is fully resolved to restrain; and hath given them order forthwith to set out a proclamation to that effect; not intending in that point to stand upon any doubt of law, nor to expect the Judges' interpretation; nor to allow any

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(y) Lord Bacon, in his letter of November 22, 1619, mentions, that there was offered 2000l. increase yearly for the tobacco, to begin at Michaelmas, as it now is, and 3000l. increase, if the plantations here within land be restrained.
Lord Chancellor BACON.

freehold in that case; but holding this the safest rule, Salus reipublicæ suprema lex esto. And so I rest.

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Newmarket, Nov. 27, 1619.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE presented both the submissions to his Majesty. His answer is, he cannot alter that, which was allowed of by the Lords of the last Star-Chamber-day, except first they be acquainted with it, and the consent of the Lady Exeter be likewise had, because the decree doth necessarily require it. So I rest.

Your Lordship's humble servant,

G. BUCKINGHAM.

Indorsed,

Touching the submissions of Sir Thomas Lake and his Lady.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

I ACQUAINTED this day the bearer with his Majesty's pleasure touching Lake's (z) submission; which, whether it should be done in person, or in writing, his Majesty signified his will thus; that it should be spared in open court, if my Lady of Exeter should consent, and the board think fit. The

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(z) Sir Thomas Lake's.
board liked it well, and appointed my Lord Digby and Secretary Calvert to speak with my Lady, who returned her answer in substance, that she would, in this and all things, be commanded by his Majesty: but if his Majesty left it to her liberty and election, she humbly prayed to be excused. And though it was told her, that this answer would be cause, that it could not be performed this term; yet she seemed willing rather it should be delayed, than dispensed with.

This day also Trafke (a), in open court, made a retraction of his wicked opinions in writing. The form was as good as may be. I declared to him, that this court was the judgement-seat; the mercy-seat was his Majesty: but the court would command him to his Majesty: and I humbly pray his Majesty to signify his pleasure speedily, because of the misery of the man; and it is a rare thing for a sectary, that

(a) John Trafke, a Minister, who was prosecuted in the Star-Chamber for maintaining, as we find mentioned in the Reports of the Lord Chief Justice Hobart, p. 236, that the Jewish Sabbath ought to be observed, and not ours; and that we ought to abstain from all manner of swine's flesh, and those meats, which the Jews were forbidden in Leviticus, according to Bishop Andrews, in his speech in the Star-Chamber on that occasion, printed among his Lordship's works. Mr. Trafke being examined in that court, confessed, that he had divulged those opinions, and had laboured to bring as many to them as he could; and had also written a letter to the King, wherein he seemed to tax his Majesty with hypocrisy, and expressly inveighed against the Bishops High Commissioners, as bloody and cruel in their proceedings against him, and a papal clergy. He was sentenced to fine and imprisonment, not for holding those opinions (for those were examinable in the Ecclesiastical Court, and not there,) but for making of conventicles and commotions, and for scandalizing the King, the bishops, and clergy. Dr. Fuller, in his Church History of Britain, Book X. p. 77. § 64. mentions his having heard Mr. Trafke preach, and remarks, that his voice had more strength than any thing else be delivered; and that after his recantation he relapsed, not into the same, but other opinions, rather humorous than hurtful, and died obscurely at Lambeth in the reign of King Charles I.
"Lord Chancellor B A C O N."

hath once suffered smart and shame, to turn so unfeignedly, as he seemed to do.

God ever bless and keep you.

Your most obliged friend, and faithful servant,

December 1, 1619.

FR. VERULAM, Canc.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

ON Friday I left London, to hide myself at Kew; for two months and a half together to be strong-bent is too much for my bow. And yet, that the King may perceive, that in my times of leisure I am not idle, I took down with me Sir Giles Mompesson (b), and with him I have quietly conferred of that proposition, which was given me in charge by his Majesty, and after seconded by your Lordship. Wherein I find some things I like very well, and some other, that I would yet by. And one thing is much to my liking, that the proposition for bringing in his Majesty's revenue with small charge is no invention, but was on foot heretofore in King Philip's and Queen Mary's time, and had a grave and mighty opinion for it. The rest I leave to his relation, and mine own attendance.

I hope his Majesty will look to it, that the fines now to come in may do him most good. Both causes produce fines of one hundred and fourscore thousand pounds, whereof one hundred thousand-

(b) who in the parliament, which began January 30, 1628, was sentenced to be degraded, and rendered incapable of bearing any office, for practicing several abuses, in setting up new inns and ale-houses, and exacting great sums of money of the people, by pretence of letters patents granted him for that purpose. But he fled into foreign parts, finding himself abandoned by the Marquis of Buckingham, on whom he had depended for protection.
may clear the anticipations; and then the assignations may pass under the great seal, to be inrollable; so as we shall need to think of nothing but the arrears in a manner, of which I with the 20,000 l. to the strangers (with the interest) be presently satisfied. The remain may serve for the King’s present and urgent occasions. And if the King intend any gifts, let them stay for the second course (for all is not yet done,) but nothing out of these, except the King should give me the 20,000 l. I owe Peter Vanbore out of his fine, which is the chief debt I owe. But this I speak merrily. I ever rest

Your Lordship’s most obliged friend,
and faithful servant,

Kew, Decemb. 12, 1619.  
FR. VERULAM, Canc.

After I had written this letter, I received from your Lordship, by my servant, his Majesty’s acceptation of my poor services; for which I pray your Lordship to present to his Majesty my most humble thanks. I have now other things in my mind for his Majesty’s service, that no time be lost.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

His Majesty hath been pleased, out of his gracious care of Sir Robert Killigrew, to refer a suit of his, for certain concealed lands, to your Lordship and the rest of the Commissioners for the Treasury; the like whereof hath been heretofore granted to many others. My desire to your Lordship is, that he be-

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol 7006.
ing a gentleman, whom I love and with very well unto, your Lordship would shew him, for my sake, all the favour you can, in furthering his suit. Wherein your Lordship shall do me a courtesy, for which I will ever rest

Your Lordship’s faithful friend and servant,

Royston, December 15, 1619.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the LORD CHANCELLOR (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE acquainted his Majesty with your letter, who for that business, whereof Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer brought the message to his Majesty to Theobalds, returned the answer by him.

As for that, whereof Sir Giles Mompesson spake to your Lordship, his Majesty liketh very well, and so do all others, with whom his Majesty hath spoken of it; and therefore he recommendeth it to your care, not doubting but your Lordship will give all your furtherance to it, being your own work, and so much concerning his Majesty’s honour and profit; and will speak farther with your Lordship of it at his return to London.

For those other businesses of the Star-Chamber, which his Majesty hath recommended to your Lordship, he hopeth you will keep the clock still going, his profit being so much interested therein, especially seeing Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer (c) hath promised his Majesty, that he will be no more sick, whereby you shall have this comfort, that the burden will not lie upon your Lordship alone.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
(c) Sir Fulke Greville, who surrendered that office in September, 1621, being succeeded in it by Sir Richard Westen. He had been created Lord Brooke of Beauchamp’s Court, Jan. 9, 1625.

The
The little leisure I had at Theobalds made me bring your man down hither for this answer, which I hope your Lordship will excuse; and ever hold me for

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,


Indorsed, 1619.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

In the midst of business, as in the midst of a way, one should not stay long, especially when I crave no direction, but only advertise.

This day we met about the commission, the commonwealth's commission, for the poor and vagabonds, &c. We have put it into an exceeding good way, and have appointed meetings once in fourteen days, because it shall not be a-sack. I was glad to hear from the two Chief Justices, that whatsoever appears in the country to come from primum mobile (that is, the King's care) works better, than if it came from the law. Therefore we have ordered, that this commission shall be published in the several circuits in the charges of the Judges. For the rest hereafter.

For the proposition of Sir Giles Mompesson, we have met once. Exchequer-men will be Exchequer-men still; but we shall do good.

For the account, or rather imparting, of the Commissioners of Treasury to the council, I think it will but end in a compliment. But the real care (and I hope good purpose) I will not give over, the better, because I am not alone.
For the Star-Chamber business, I shall, as you write, keep the clock on going, which is hard to do, when sometimes the wheels are too many, and sometimes too few. But we shall do well, especially if those, whom the King hath hitherto made bond-men (I mean, which have given bonds for their fines) he do not hereafter make free-men.

For Suffolk's business, it is a little strange, that the Attorney made it a question to the Commissioners of Treasury, whether Suffolk should not be admitted to the lease of the extent of his own land, which is the way to encourage him not to pay his fine. But when it was told him, that the contrary course was held with the Earl of Northumberland, and that thereby he was brought to agree for his fine; then he turned, as his manner is.

For the errors, we have yet so much use of the service of Sir Henry Britten in bringing in the fines (indeed more than of the Attorney) as we cannot, without prejudice to his Majesty's service, enter yet into them; and besides, Sir Edward Coke comes not abroad.

Mr. Kirkham hath communicated with me, as matter of profit to his Majesty, upon the coals referred by his Majesty to us of the Treasury; wherein I hope we shall do good, the rather, because I am not alone.

The proclamation for light gold Mr. Secretary Calvert, I know, hath sent to his Majesty; and therefore of that I say no more.

For the raising of silver by ordinance, and not by proclamation, and that for the time to come, we have given order to finish it. I hear a whispering, that thereupon the Commissioners of the Navy, the Officers of the Household, the Wardrobe, may take occasion to break the book and the undertakings, because the prices may rise, which I thought good to signify to his Majesty. And, to speak plainly, I fear
fear more the pretence, than the natural effect.
God ever more preserve your Lordship. I rest

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,
and faithful servant,

January 20, 1619.

Fr. Verulam, Cant.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE acquainted his Majesty with your letter, who is very well pleased therewith, finding in you a continual care of his service. In that point of the Star-Chamber busines, his Majesty faith, there is a mistaking; for he meant not the Dutchmen's business, but that motion, which your Lordship made unto him, of sitting in the Star-Chamber about the commissions, which you had not leisure to read till he came down to Royston, and hath reason to give you thanks for it, desiring you to prepare it, and study the point (of which he will speak more with you at his return to London,) being a matter worthy your thinking on, and his Majesty's practice.

For the last point of your letter, his Majesty faith, it cannot but proceed of malice, that there should be any such plot, which he will not endure, but he will account those, that whisper of it in that fort, enemies of his service; and will put them out of their places, that practise it. And so I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Newmarket, January 22, 1619.

G. Buckingham.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7066.
Mr. Secretary,

I HAVE received your letter of the 3d of this present, signifying his Majesty’s pleasure touching Peacock’s (d) examinations, of which I will have special care.

My Lord Coke is come to town, and hath sent me word, he will be with me on Monday, though he be somewhat lame. Howsoever, the service shall be done.

I was made acquainted, by your letter to Secretary Naunton, with his Majesty’s dislike of the sending to him of the jolly letter from Zealand. I will now speak for myself, that, when it was received, I turned to the Master of the Wards (e), and said, “Well, I think you and I shall ever advise the King to do more for a Burlamachi, when he seeketh to his Majesty by supplication and supplying the King at the first word, than for all the rest upon any bravados from the Burgomasters of Holland and Zealand:” Who answered very honestly, that it was in the King’s power to make them alter their style when he would. But when another of us said, we could not but in our own discharge send the King the letter, *seilicet neeandum non fuit*; though indeed my way is otherwise.

I have at last recovered from these companions, Harrison and Dale, a copy of my Lord of Ban-

(d) He was a Minifter of the university of Cambridge. He was committed to the Tower, for pretending, that he had, by forcery, infatuated the King’s judgement in the cause of Sir Thomas Lake. *Comm. Annal. Regii Jacobi I.* p. 54.

(e) Sir Lionel Cranfield.
LETTERS, &c.

gor's (f) book, the great one, and will presently set in hand the examinations. God keep you.

February 5, 1619.

Your assured friend,

Fr. Verulam, Canl.

To the King.

May it please your Majesty,

Sir Edward Coke is now a-foot, and, according to your command, signified by Mr. Secretary Calvert, we proceed in Peacock's examinations. For although there have been very good diligence used, yet certainly we are not at the bottom; and he, that would not use the utmost of his line to found such a business as this, should not have due regard, neither to your Majesty's honour, nor safety.

A man would think he were in Luke Hutton's case again; for as my Lady Roos perforated Luke Hutton, so, it seemeth, Peacock personatheth Atkins. But I make no judgement yet, but will go on with all diligence; and, if it may not be done otherwise, it is fit Peacock be put to torture. He deserveth it as well as Peacham did.

I beseech your Majesty not to think I am more bitter, because my name is in it; for, besides that I always make my particular a cypher, when there

(f) Dr. Lewis Bayly, born at Caermarthen in Wales, and educated in Exeter-College, Oxford. He had been Minister of Evesham in Worcestershire, and Chaplain to Prince Henry, and Reitor of St. Matthew's, Friday-Street, in London. He was promoted to the Bishopric of Bangor in 1616. On the 15th of July, 1621, he was committed to the Fleet, but on what account is not related by Camden, Annales Regis Jacobi I. p. 72. who mentions the Circumstance of the Bishop's imprisonment; but that he was soon after set at liberty. He was the author of the well-known book, the Practice of Piety.
is question of your Majesty's honour and service, I think myself honoured, for being brought into so good company. And as, without flattery, I think your Majesty the best of Kings, and my noble Lord of Buckingham, the best of persons favoured; so I hope, without presumption, for my honest and true intentions to state and justice, and my love to my master, I am not the worst of Chancellors.

God ever preserve your Majesty.

Your Majesty's most obliged,

and most obedient servant,

10th of February, 1619.

Fr. Verulam, Canc.

To the Lord Chancellor.

Most honoured Lord,

I Presume, now after term (if there be any such thing as an after-term with your Lordship,) to offer this inclosed paper (g) to your sight, concerning the Duke of Lerma; which, if your Lordship have not already read, will not, I think, be altogether unpleasing, because it is full of particular circumstances. I know not how commonly it paffeth up and down more or less. My friend, Mr. Gage, sent it me lately out of Spain. But howsoever, I build upon a sure ground; for though it should be vulgar, yet for my desire to serve your Lordship, I cannot demerit so much, as not to deserve a pardon at your Lordship's most noble hand.

(g) I have, out of a ragged hand in Spanish translated it, and accompanied it with some marginal notes for your Lordship's greater ease. Note of Mr. Matthew.
Before the departure of the Duke of Lermà from that court, there was written upon the gate for a pasquinade, that the house was governed \( \text{por el Padre, y el Hijo, y un Santo} \); as in Paris about the same time was written upon the Louvre-Gate, \( C'est icy l'hôtel des trôys Roys \), for Luynes's brother is almost as great as himself. But the while there is good store of Kings now in Christendom, though there be one fewer than there was.

In Spain, there are very extraordinary preparations for a great armada. Here is lately in this court a current speech, as that the enterprize (whatsoever it should have been) is laid wholly aside: but that were strange. Yet this is certain, that the forces of men, to the number of almost two thousand, which were to have gone into Spain from hence, are discharged, together with some munition, which was also upon the point of being sent. Another thing is also certain, that both in the court of Spain and this, there is at this time a strange straitness of money; which I do not conceive, for my part, to proceed so much from want, as design to employ it. The rendezvous, where the forces were to meet, was at Malaga, within the Straits; which makes the enterprize upon Algeriers most likely to be intended. For I take that to be a wild conceit, which thinks of going by the Adriatic \( \text{per far in un Viaggio duoï servitii} \); as the giving a blow to Venice, and the landing of forces in aid of the King of Bohemia about Trieste.

Perhaps the King of Spain would be glad to let the world see, that now he is \( \text{bors de paye} \); and by shewing himself in some action, to intitle the Duke of Lerma to all his former sloth; or perhaps he now makes a great preparation, upon the pretence of some enterprize, that he will let fall, that so he may with the less noise assemble great forces some other year, for some other attempt not spoken of now.
My Lord Compton is in this court, and goes shortly towards Italy. His fashion is sweet, and his disposition noble, and his conversation fair and honest. Diego, my Lord Roos’s man, is come hither. I pray God it be to do me any good towards the recovery of the debt his Lord owes me.

Most honoured Lord, I am here at good leisure to look back upon your Lordship’s great and noble goodness towards me, which may go for a great example in this age; and so it doth. That, which I am sure of, is, that my poor heart, such as it is, doth not only beat, but even boil in the desires it hath to do your Lordship all humble service.

I crave leave, though it be against good manners, that I may ever present my humblest service to my most honoured Lady, my Lady Verulam, and Lady Constable, with my best respects to my dear friend, Sir John Constable; who, if your Lordship want the leisure, would perhaps cast an eye upon the inclosed paper.

I do, with more confidence, presume to address this other letter to Mr. Meautys, because the contents thereof concern your Lordship’s service.

I beseech sweet Jesus to make and keep your Lordship entirely happy. So I humbly do you reverence, remaining ever

Your Lordship’s most obliged servant,

Tobie Matthew.

(b) Spencer, Lord Compton, only son of William, Earl of Northampton. This nobleman, who succeeded his father in his title and estate, in June, 1630, was killed at Hopton-Heath, near Stafford, on Sunday, March 19, 1643, fighting for King Charles I.
PoST. I should be glad to receive some of your Lordship's philosophical labours, if your Lordship could so think fit. I do now receive a letter from the Conde de Gondomar, who, thinking that it should find me in England, faith thus: 

_Befo las manes mil vezes a mi senhor, el senhor Gran Chancilor, con meu corazón; como estoy en su buena gracia._ The Emperor is dead long since, and the Emperor is so sickly, or rather so sick, that they forbear to bury her with solemnity, as conceiving, that he will have charge by dying shortly. They say here, that the business of Bohemia is growing towards an end by composition.

Brussels, this 14th of February, 1619.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

For the services committed to Sir Lionel Cranfield, after his Majesty hath spoken with him, I shall attend and follow his Majesty's pleasure and directions, and yield my best care, advice, and endeavour for performance.

In the pretermitted duty I have some profit, and more was to have had, if Queen Anne had lived. Wherefore I shall become an humble suitor to his Majesty, that I may become no loser, specially seeing the business had been many a time and oft quite overthrown, if it had not been upheld only, or chiefly, by myself; so that whatsoever service hath been since done, is upon my foundation.

Mr. Attorney (_i_*) growth pretty pert with me of late; and I see well who they are, that maintain him. But be they flies, or be they wasps, I neither care for buzzies nor stings, most especially in any thing, that

_cm_ Sir Henry Yelverton._

concerneth
concerneth my duty to his Majesty, or my love to your Lordship.

I forgot not, in my public charge, the last Star-Chamber-day, to publish his Majesty's honour for his late commission for the relief of the poor, and suppressing vagabonds; as also his gracious intention touching informers, which, I perceive, was received with much applause. That of projectors I spake not of, because it is not yet ripe, neither doth it concern the execution of any law, for which my speech was proper.

God ever preserve and prosper you.

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

February 17, 1619.

Fr. Verulam, Canc.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I send, by post, this sealed packet, containing my Lord of Suffolk's answer in the Star-Chamber. I received it this evening at six of the clock, by the hands of the Master of the Rolls (k), sealed as it is with my Lord of Suffolk's seal, and the Master's of the Rolls. But neither I, nor the Master of the Rolls, know what is in it; but it cometh first to his Majesty's sight. Only I did direct, that because the authentic copy (unto which my Lord is sworn, according to the course of the court) is not so fit for his Majesty's reading, my Lord of Suffolk should send withal a paper copy, which his Majesty might read with less trouble.

(4) Sir Julius Caesar.
My Lady Suffolk is so ill of the small-pox, as she is not yet fit to make any answer.

Bingley's (l) answer is come in, a long one; and, as I perceive, with some things impertinent, yea, and unfit. Of that I confer with Mr. Sollicitor (m) to-morrow; and then, I will farther advertise your Lordship

God ever preserve and prosper you.

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

York-house, this 23d of Febr. 1619, at 9 of the clock [16½].

Fr. VERULAM, Cant.

To the Lord Chancellor.

Most honored Lord,

I do even now receive this letter from the Conde de Gondonar, with direction I should send it (since I am not there to deliver it) to Mr. Wyche, that so he may present it to your Lordship's hand at such time, as it may be of most use to him. He commands me besides, that for his sake I should become a humble sollicitor to your Lordship for this friend of his; which I presume to do the more willingly, because this party is a great friend of mine, and so are also many of his friends, my friends. Besides, he wills me to represent his great thanks to your Lordship, for the just favours you have been pleased to vouchsafe to Mr. Wyche already, the rather, in contemplation of the Conde, as he hath been informed. And if in the company, or rather in the attendance, of so great an intercessor, it be not an un-

(l) Sir John Bingley's.
(m) Sir Thomas Coventry.
pardonable kind of ill manners to intrude myself, I presume to cast myself at your Lordship's feet, with pretention, that I shall be very particularly bound to your Lordship's goodness for any favour, with justice, that he shall obtain.

I beseech Jesus keep your Lordship ever intirely happy; and so doing all humble reverence, I take leave.

Your Lordship's most humble,
and most obliged servant,

Brussels, this 26th of February, 1619.

Tobie Matthew.

To the Lord Chancellor(*).

My honourable Lord,

UNDERSTANDING, that there hath been a long and tedious suit depending in the Chancery between Robert D'Oyley and his wife, plaintiffs, and Leonard Lovace, defendant; which cause hath been heretofore ended by award, but is now revived again, and was, in Michaelmas term last, fully heard before your Lordship; at which hearing your Lordship did not give your opinion thereof, but were pleased to defer it, untill breviats were delivered on both sides; which, as I am informed, hath been done accordingly: now my desire unto your Lordship is, that you will be pleased to take some time, as speedily as your Lordship may, to give your opinion thereof, and so make a final end, as your Lordship shall find the same in equity to deserve. For which I will ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Windsor, 18th of May, 1620.

G. Buckingham.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7006.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I WENT to Kew for pleasure, but I met with pain. But neither pleasure, nor pain, can withdraw my mind, from thinking of his Majesty's service. And because his Majesty shall see how I was occupied at Kew, I send him these papers of rules for the Star-Chamber, wherein his Majesty shall erect one of the noblest and durablest pillars for the justice of this kingdom in perpetuity, that can be, after, by his own wisdom, and the advice of his Lords, he shall have revised them, and established them. The manner and circumstances I refer to my attending his Majesty. The rules are not all set down; but I will do the rest within two or three days. I ever remain

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,
and faithful servant,

June 9, 1620.

Fr. Verulam, Canc.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My very good Lord,

SUCH is my haste at this time, that I cannot write so largely to yourself, as I would, in the business of the state, in which once already I sent to your Lordship, and in which I only desire the good of the commonwealth, and the service of my master. I therefore have sent this bearer, my servant, unto you, and committed the relation of the business to

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7009.
him. And I do intreat your Lordship to give credit to what he shall deliver your Lordship therein, with your lawful assistance of my desires; wherein I doubt not but you shall do a very good office. And I shall rest ready to requite your courtesies; and, with my best wishes, continue

Your very loving friend,

Egham, July 6,
1620.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

Indorsed,

My Lord Marquis in the behalf of his servant, Mr. Porter, and Mr. Dallington.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

HIS Majesty having made a reference of business to your Lordship, concerning Sir Robert Douglas and Mr. David Ramsey, two of his Highness's servants, whom he loveth, and whom I wish very well unto; I have thought fit to desire you to shew them all the favour your Lordship may therein: which I will acknowledge, and ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

G. BUCKINGHAM.

The reference comes in the name of my brother Christopher, because they thought it would succeed the better: but the Prince wisteth well to it.

Farnham, the last of August, 1620.

Indorsed, Touching the business of wills.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000.
Amongst the counsels, which, since the

A

time I had the honour to be first of your learned, and after of your privy council, I have given your Majesty faithfully, according to my small ability; I do take comfort in none more, than that I was the first, that advised you to come in person into the Star-Chamber; knowing very well, that those virtues of your Majesty, which I saw near hand, would out of that throne, both as out of a sphere, illustrate your own honour, and, as out of a fountain, water and refresh your whole land. And because your Majesty, in that you have already done, hath so well effected that, which I foresaw and desired, even beyond my expectation; it is no marvel, if I resort still to the branches of that counsel, that hath borne so good fruit.

The Star-Chamber, in the institution thereof, hath two uses; the one as a supreme court of judicature; the other as an open council. In the first kind, your Majesty hath sat there now twice: the first time, in a cause of force, concerning the duels; the second time, in a cause of fraud, concerning the forgeries and conspiracies against the Lady of Exeter; which two natures of crimes, force and fraud, are the proper objects of that court.

In the second kind, your Majesty came the first time of all, when you did set in frame and fabric the several jurisdictions of your courts. There wants a fourth part of the square to make all complete, which is, if your Majesty will be pleased to publish

(\textsuperscript{n}) This letter appears to have been written after the proceedings against Sir Thomas Lake, and his Lady and daughter, in the Star-Chamber, in January \textsuperscript{161?}, and before the resolution of calling the parliament, which met January \textsuperscript{30, 162?}. certain
certain commonwealth commissions; which, as your Majesty hath well begun to do in some things, and to speak of in some others; so, if your Majesty will be pleased to make a solemn declaration of them in that place, this will follow:

First, that your Majesty shall do yourself an infinite honour, and win the hearts of your people to acknowledge you, as well the most politic King, as the most just.

Secondly, it will oblige your Commissioners to a more strict account, when they shall be engaged by such a public charge and commandment. And, thirdly, it will invite and direct any man, that finds himself to know any thing concerning those commissions, to bring in their informations. So as I am persuaded it will eternise your name and merit, and that King James's commissions will be spoken of, and put in use, as long as Britain lasts; at the least, in the reign of all good Kings.

For the particulars, besides the two commissions of the navy, and the buildings about London (wherein your Majesty may consider, whether you will have any thing altered or supplied,) I wish these following to be added.

Commission for advancing the clothing of England, as well the old drapery as the new, and all the incidents thereunto.

Commission for staying treasure within the realm, and the reglement of monies.

Commission for the provision of the realm with corn and grain, and the government of the exportation and importation thereof; and directing of public granaries, if cause be.

Commission for introducing and nourishing manufactures within the realm, for the setting people at work, and the considering of all grants and privileges of that nature.
Commission to prevent the depopulation of towns and houses of husbandry, and for nuisances and high-ways.
Commission for the recovery of drowned lands.
Commission for the suppression of the grievances of informers.
Commission for the better proceedings in the plantations of Ireland.
Commission for the provision of the realm with all kind of warlike defence, ordnance, powder, munition, and armour.

Of these you may take and leave, as it shall please you; and I wish the articles concerning every one of them (first allowed by your council) to be read openly, and the Commissioners names.

For the good, that comes of particular and select committees and commissions, I need not commonplace, for your Majesty hath found the good of them; but nothing to that, that will be, when such things are published; because it will vindicate them from neglect, and make many good spirits, that we little think of, co-operate in them.

I know very well, that the world, that commonly is apt to think, that the care of the commonwealth is but a pretext in matters of state, will perhaps conceive, that this is but a preparative to a parliament. But let not that hinder your Majesty's magnanimity, in opere operato, that is so good; and besides, that opinion, for many respects, will do no hurt to your affairs.

To the Lord Chancellor(*).

My very good Lord,

By his Majesty's directions, Sir Francis Blundell will deliver you a petition of Sir Francis Annesly, his Majesty's Secretary of Ireland, with his

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000.
Majesty's pleasure thereupon. To the gentleman I wish very well, and do therefore recommend him and his cause to your Lordship's good favour; and your respect of him, in his absence, I will thankfully acknowledge. So I take my leave.

Your Lordship's very loving friend,

Theobalds, the 2d of October, 1620,

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the KING.

It may please your most excellent Majesty,

It being a thing to speak or write, specially to a King, in public, another in private, although I have dedicated a work (e), or rather a portion of a work, which, at last, I have overcome, to your Majesty by a public epistle, where I speak to you in the hearing of others; yet I thought fit also humbly to seek access for the same, not so much to your person, as to your judgement, by these private lines.

The work, in what colours soever it may be set forth, is no more but a new logic, teaching to invent and judge by induction, as finding syllogism incompetent for sciences of nature; and thereby to make philosophy and sciences both more true and more active.

This tending to inlarge the bounds of reason, and to endow man's estate with new value, was no improper oblation to your Majesty, who, of men, is the greatest master of reason, and author of beneficence.

There be two of your council, and one other bishop (p) of this land, that know I have been about

(e) Novum Organum.
(p) Dr. Lancelot Andrews, Bishop of Winchester.
some such work near thirty years (q); so as I made no haste. And the reason, why I have published it now, specially being unperfect, is, to speak plainly, because I number my days, and would have it saved. There is another reason of my so doing, which is to try, whether I can get help in one intended part of this work, namely, the compiling of a natural and experimental history, which must be the main foundation of a true and active philosophy.

This work is but a new body of clay, whereinto your Majesty, by your countenance and protection, may breathe life. And, to tell your Majesty truly what I think, I account your favour may be to this work as much as an hundred years time: for I am persuaded, the work will gain upon men’s minds in ages, but your gracing it may make it take hold more swiftly; which I would be very glad of, it being a work meant, not for praise or glory, but for practice, and the good of men. One thing, I confess, I am ambitious of, with hope, which is, that after these beginnings, and the wheel once set on going, men shall seek more truth out of Christian pens, than hitherto they have done out of heathen. I say with hope; because I hear my former book of the Advancement of Learning, is well tasted in the universities here, and the English colleges abroad; and this is the same argument sink deeper.

(q) Mr. Chamberlain, in a letter to Sir Dudley Carleton, Ambassador at Holland, dated at London, October 28, 1620, mentions, that Mr. Henry Cuffe, who had been Secretary to Robert, Earl of Essex, and executed for being concerned in his treasons, having long since perused this work, gave this censure, that a fool could not have written such a work, and a wise man would not. And, in another letter, dated February 3, 1628, Mr. Chamberlain takes notice, that the King could not forbear sometimes, in reading that book, to say, that it was like the peace of God, that passeth all understanding.
Lord Chancellor Bacon

And so I ever humbly rest in prayers, and all other duties,
Your Majesty's most bounden and devoted servant,
York-house, this 12th of October, 1620.

Fr. Verulam, Canc.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

There is a business in your Lordship's hands, with which Sir Robert Lloyd did acquaint your Lordship; whereof the Prince hath demanded of me what account is given. And because I cannot inform his Highness of any proceeding therein, I desire your Lordship to use all expedition, that may be, in making your answer to me, that I may give his Highness some satisfaction, who is very desirous thereof. And so I rest.

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,
Royston, 14th of October, 1620.
G. Buckingham.

Indorsed, Touching the register of wills.

To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I DESIRE your Lordship to continue your favour to Sir Thomas Gerrard, in the business concerning him, wherein I signified his Majesty's pleasure to your Lordship. And one favour more I am to intreat of your Lordship in his behalf, that you will be pleased to speak to one of the assistants of the

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000. Chancellor
Chancellor of the Duchy, in whose court he hath a cause depending, as he will more fully inform your Lordship himself, to see, that he may have a fair proceeding, according to justice: for which I will ever rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Royton, 15th of October, 1620.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

YOUR Lordship desiring to understand what cometh of the business, after which the Prince hearkeneth, I was in doubt which of the two businesses you meant; that of the Duchy, or that of the Prerogative-Court for wills; for both are recommended from the Prince. But be it one, or be it the other, no time hath been lost in either; for Mr. Secretary Naunton and I have entered into both. For the Duchy, we have already stayed all proceeding to the King's disservice for those manors, which are not already passed under seal. For that, which is passed, we have heard the Attorney (r) with none, or little, satisfaction hitherto. The Chancellor (s) is not yet come, though sent for. For the other, we have heard Sir John Bennet (t), and given him leave to acquaint my Lord of Canterbury; and have required the Solicitor (u) to come well prepared for the King. So that in neither we can certify yet; and to trouble

(r) Sir Henry Yelverton.
(s) Sir Humphrey May, made Chancellor of the Duchy, March 9, 1617.
(t) Judge of the Prerogative-Court of Canterbury. In 1621 he was fined 20000 l. for bribery, corruption, and extortion in that office. He died in 1627.
(u) Sir Thomas Coventry.

your
Lord Chancellor Bacon.

your Lordship, while business is but in passage, were

time lost. I ever rest

Your Lordship’s most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

October 16, 1620.

Fr. Verulam, Canz.

To the King, thanking his Majesty for his gracious
acceptance of his book.

May it please your Majesty,

I cannot express, how much comfort I re-
ceived by your last letter of your own royal
hand (w). I see your Majesty is a star, that hath be-
nevolent aspect and gracious influence upon all
things, that tend to a general good.

Daponi, quid antiquos signorum suspicis artus?
Ecce Dionaei proceffit Caesaris aetrum;
Aetrum, quo segetes gaudeant frugibus, et quo
Duceret apricis in collibus uva colorem (x).

This work, which is for the bettering of men’s bread
and wine, which are the characters of temporal bless-
ings and sacraments of eternal, I hope, by God’s holy
providence, will be ripened by Cæsar’s star.

Your Majesty shall not only do to myself a singu-
lar favour, but to your business a material help, if
you will be graciously pleased to open yourself to me
in those things, wherein you may be unsatisfied. For
though this work, as by position and principle, doth
disclaim to be tried by any thing but by experience,

(w) of the 16th of October, 1620, printed in Lord Bacon’s
works.

(x) Virgil, Eclog. IX. verf. 46—50.
and the results of experience in a true way; yet the sharpness and profoundness of your Majesty's judgement ought to be an exception to this general rule; and your questions, observations, and admonishments, may do infinite good.

This comfortable beginning makes me hope farther, that your Majesty will be aiding to me, in setting men on work for the collecting of a natural and experimental history; which is basis totius negotii, a thing, which I assure myself, will be from time to time an excellent recreation unto you; I say, to that admirable spirit of yours, that delighteth in light: and I hope well, that even in your times many noble inventions may be discovered for man's use. For who can tell, now this mine of truth is opened, how the veins go; and what lieth higher, and what lieth lower? But let me trouble your Majesty no farther at this time. God ever preserve and prosper your Majesty.

[October 19, 1620.]

To the Marquis of Buckingbam.

My very good Lord,

I SEND now only to give his Majesty thanks for the singular comfort, which I received by his Majesty's letter of his own hand, touching my book. And I must also give your Lordship of my best thanks, for your letter so kindly and affectionately written.

I did even now receive your Lordship's letter touching the proclamation, and do approve his Majesty's judgement and foresight about mine own. Neither would I have thought of inserting matter of state for the vulgar, but that now-a-days there is no vulgar, but all statesmen. But, as his Majesty doth excellently
Lord Chancellor BACON.

Cellently consider, the time of it is not yet proper. I ever rest

Your Lordship's most obliged friend, and faithful servant,

October 19, 1620.

Fr. Verulam, Can.

Indorsed,

In answer to his Majesty's directions touching the proclamation for a parliament.

Notes of a Speech of the Lord Chancellor in the Star-Chamber, in the cause of Sir Henry Yelverton, Attorney General (y).

Sorry for the person, being a gentleman, that I lived with in Grey's-Inn; served with him when I was Attorney; joined with him in many services, and one, that ever gave me more attributes in public, than I deserved; and, besides, a man of very good parts, which with me is friendship at first sight; much more, joined with so ancient an acquaintance.

But, as a Judge, I hold the offence very great, and that without pressing measure; upon which I will only make a few observations, and so leave it.

(y) He was prosecuted in the Star-Chamber, for having passed certain clauses in a charter, lately granted to the city of London, not agreeable to his Majesty's warrant, and derogatory to his honour. But the chief reason of the severity against him was thought to be the Marquis of Buckingham's resentment against him, for having opposed, according to the duty of his office, some oppressive, if not illegal, patents, which the projectors of those times were busy in preparing.

R 1. First
1. First I observe the danger and consequence of the offence: for if it be suffered, that the learned council shall practise the art of multiplication upon their warrants, the crown will be destroyed in small time. The great seal, the privy seal, signet, are solemn things; but they follow the King's hand. It is the bill drawn by the learned council and the docquet, that leads the King's hand.

2. Next I note the nature of the defence. As first, that it was error in judgement; for this surely, if the offence were small, though clear, or great, but doubtful, I should hardly sentence it. For it is hard to draw a strict line by steadiness of hand; but it could not be the swerving of the hand. And herein I note the wisdom of the law of England, which termeth the highest contempts and excesses of authority, *misprisions;* which, if you take the found and derivation of the words, is but *mistaken:* but if you take the use and acceptance of the word, it is high and heinous contempts and usurpations of authority; whereof the reason I take to be, and the name excellently imposed; for that main mistaking, it is ever joined with contempt; for he, that reveres, will not easily mistake; but he, that flights, and thinks more of the greatness of his place than of the duty of his place, will soon commit misprisions.

Indorsed, Star-Chamber, October 24, 1620.
*Notes upon Mr. Attorney's cause.*

*To the Marquis of Buckingham.*

My very good Lord,

It may be, your Lordship will expect to hear from me what passed yesterday in the Star-Chamber, touching Yelverton's cause, though we desired Secretary Calvert to acquaint his Majesty therewith.
To make short, at the motion of the Attorney, in person at the bar, and at the motion of my Lord Steward (z) in court, the day of proceeding is deferred till the King's pleasure is known. This was against my opinion, then declared plain enough, but put to votes, and ruled by the major part, though some concurred with me.

I do not like of this course, in respect that it puts the King in a strait; for either the note of severity must rest upon his Majesty, if he go on; or the thanks of clemency is in some part taken away, if his Majesty go not on.

I have cor unum et via una; and therefore did my part as a Judge and the King's Chancellor. What is farther to be done, I will advise the King faithfully, when I see his Majesty and your Lordship.

But before I give advice, I must ask a question first. God ever preserve and prosper you.

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,
and faithful servant,

October 28, 1620.

Fr. Verulam, Can.

To the KING.

It may please your most excellent Majesty,

In performance of your royal pleasure, signified by Sir John Suckling (a), we have at several times considered of the petition of Mr. Christopher Villiers (b), and have heard, as well the registers and ministers of the Prerogative-Court of Canterbury, and their

(a) The Duke of Lenox.

(b) Youngest brother to the Marquis of Buckingham. He was created, April 23, 1623, Baron of Daventry and Earl of Anglesey. He died September 24, 1624.

R 2 council,
council, as also the council of the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury. And setting aside such other points, as are desired by the petition, we do think, that your Majesty may by law, and without inconvenience, appoint an officer, that shall have the ingrossing of the transcripts of all wills to be sealed with the seal of either of the Prerogative-Courts, which shall be proved in communi formâ; and likewise of all inventories, to be exhibited in the same courts.

We see it necessary, that all wills, which are not judicially controverted, be ingrossed before theprobate. Yet, as the law now stands, no officer of those courts can lawfully take any fee or reward for ingrossing the said wills and inventories, the statute of the 21st of King Henry the VIIIth restraining them. Wherefore we hold it much more convenient, that it should be done by a lawful officer, to be appointed by your Majesty, than in a cause not warrantable by law. Yet our humble opinion and advice is, that good consideration be had in passing this book, as well touching a moderate proportion of fees to be allowed for the pains and travel of the officer, as for the expedition of the suitor, in such sort, that the subject may find himself in better case than he is now, and not in worse.

But however we conceive this may be convenient in the two courts of prerogative, where there is much business; yet in the ordinary course of the Bishop's diocesan, we hold the same will be inconvenient, in regard of the small employment.

Your Majesty's most faithful,
and obedient servant,

November 15, 1620.  
FR. VERULAM, Canc.  
ROBERT NAUNTON.  
HENRY MONTAGU (c).

(c) Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, who, on the 3d of December following, was advanced to the post of Lord High Treasurer.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

After my very hearty commendations, I have acquainted his Majesty with your letter, who commanded me to tell you, that he had been thinking upon the same point, whereof you write, three or four days ago, being so far from making any question of it, that he every day expected when a writ should come down. For at the creation of Prince Henry, the Lords of the council and Judges assured his Majesty of as much, as the precedents, mentioned in your letter, speak of. And so I rest

Your Lordship's very loving friend

at command,

Newmarket, the 24th of Novemb. 1620.

G. Buckingham.

Indorsed,
Shewing his Majesty is satisfied with precedents, touching the Prince's summons to parliament.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

Your Lordship may find, that in the number of patents, which we have represented to his Majesty, as like to be stirred in by the Lower House of Parliament, we have set down three, which may concern some of your Lordship's special friends, which I account as mine own friends; and so shewed myself, when they were in suit. The one, that to Sir

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000.
Giles Momperston, touching the inns; the second, to Mr. Christopher Villiers and Mr. Maule, touching the recognizances for ale-houses; the third, to Mr. Lieutenant of the Tower, touching the caff. These in duty could not be omitted, for that, specially the two first of them, are more rumoured, both by the vulgar, and by the gentlemen, yea, and by the judges themselves, than any other patents at this day. Therefore I thought it appertained to the singular love and affection, which I bear you upon so many obligations, to wish and advise, that your Lordship, whom God hath made in all things fit to be beloved, would put off the envy of these things, which I think in themselves bear no great fruit; and rather take the thanks for ceasing them, than the note for maintaining them. But, howsoever, let me know your mind, and your Lordship shall find I will go your way.

I cannot express, how much comfort I take in the choice his Majesty hath made of my Lord Chief Justice to be Lord Treasurer; not for his sake, nor for my sake, but for the King's sake; hoping, that now a number of counsels, which I have given for the establishment of his Majesty's estate, and have lain dead and buried deeper than this snow, may now spring up, and bear fruit; the rather, for that I persuade myself, he and I shall run one way. And yet I know well, that in this doubling world cor una et via una is rare in one man, but more rare between two. And therefore, if it please his Majesty, according to his prudent custom in such cases, to cast out, now at his coming down, some words, which may the better knit us in conjunction to do him service, I suppose it will be to no idle purpose.

And as an old truant in the commission of the treasury, let me put his Majesty in remembrance of three things now upon his entrance, which he is presently to go in hand with: the first, to make Ireland
to bear the charge thereof: the second, to bring all accounts to one purse in the Exchequer: the third, by all possible means to endeavour the taking off of the anticipations. There be a thousand things more; but these being his Majesty's last commands to the Commissioners of the Treasury, with such as in his Majesty's princely judgement shall occur, will do well to season his place.

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

November 29, 1620.

Fr. Verulam, Canc.

As soon as I had written this letter, I received your Lordship's letter, touching my Lord Chief Justice, which redoubled my comfort, to see how his Majesty's thoughts and mine, his poor servant's, and your Lordship's, meet.

I send inclosed names for the Speaker; and if his Majesty, or your Lordship, demand our opinion, which of them, my Lord Chief Justice will tell you. It were well it were dispatched; for else I will not dine with the Speaker; for his drink will not be laid in time enough.

I beseech your Lordship, care may be taken, that our general letter may be kept secret, whereof my Lord Chief Justice will tell you the reason.

To the King.

It may please your most excellent Majesty,

According to your commandment, we have heard once more the proctors of the Prerogative-Court, what they could say; and find no reason
to alter, in any part, our former certificate. Thus much withall we think fit to note to your Majesty, that our former certificate, which we now ratify, is principally grounded upon a point in law, upon the statute of 24 Henry VIII, wherein we the Chancellor and Treasurer, for our own opinions, do conceive the law is clear; and your Solicitor General (d) concurs.

Now whether your Majesty will be pleased to rest in our opinions, and so to pass the patents; or give us leave to assist ourselves with the opinion of some principal Judges now in town, whereby the law may be the better resolved, to avoid farther question hereafter; we leave it to your Majesty's royal pleasure. This we represent the rather, because we discern such a confidence in the proctors, and those upon whom they depend, as, it is not unlike, they will bring it to a legal question.

And to we humbly kiss your Majesty's hands, praying for your preservation.

Your Majesty's most humble

and obedient servants,

York-house, December 12, 1620.

FR. VERULAM, Canc.
HENRY MONTAGU,
ROBERT NAUNTON.

The Lord Chancellor and two Chief Justices (e) to the Marquis of Buckingham.

Our very good Lord,

It may please his Majesty to call to mind, that when we gave his Majesty our last account of

(d) Sir Thomas Coventry, who was made Attorney General, January 14, 1622.
(e) Sir Henry Montagu of the King's Bench, and Sir Henry Hobart of the Common Pleas.
parliament business in his presence, we went over the grievances of the last parliament in July (f), with our opinion by way of probable conjecture, which of them are like to fall off, and which may perchance stick and be renewed. And we did also then acquaint his Majesty, that we thought it no less fit to take into consideration grievances of like nature, which have sprung up since the said last session, which are the more like to be called upon, by how much they are the more fresh, signifying withall, that they were of two kinds; some proclamations and commissions, and many patents; which, nevertheless, we did not trouble his Majesty withall in particular; partly, for that we were not then fully prepared (as being a work of some length,) and partly, for that we then desired and obtained leave of his Majesty to communicate them with the council-table. But now since, I, the Chancellor, received his Majesty's pleasure by Secretary Calvert, that we should first present them to his Majesty with some advice thereupon provisionally, and as we are capable, and thereupon know his Majesty's pleasure before they be brought to the table, which is the work of this dispatch.

And hereupon his Majesty may be likewise pleased to call to mind, that we then said, and do now also humbly make remonstrance to his Majesty, that in this we do not so much express the sense of our own minds or judgements upon the particulars, as we do personate the Lower House, and cast with ourselves what is like to be stirred there. And therefore if there be any thing, either in respect of the matter, or the persons, that stands not so well with his Majesty's good liking, that his Majesty would be graciously pleased not to impute it unto us; and withall

\((f)\) that which began February 9, 1609; and was prorogued July 23, 1610.
to consider, that it is to this good end, that his Majesty may either remove such of them, as in his own princely judgement, or with the advice of his council, he shall think fit to be removed; or be the better provided to carry through such of them, as he shall think fit to be maintained, in case they should be moved; and so the less surprized.

First, therefore to begin with the patents, we find three sorts of patents, and those somewhat frequent, since the session of 7mo, which in general we conceive may be most subject to exception of grievance; patents of old debts, patents of concealments, and patents of monopolies, and forfeitures for dispensations of penal laws; together with some other particulars, which fall not so properly under any one head.

In these three heads, we do humbly advise several courses to be taken; for the first two, of old debts and concealments, for that they are in a sort legal, though there may be found out some point in law to overthrow them; yet it would be a long business by course of law, and a matter unusual by act of council, to call them in. But that, that moves us chiefly, to avoid the questioning them at the council-table, is, because if they shall be taken away by the King's act, it may let in upon him a flood of suitors for recompence; whereas, if they be taken away at the suit of the parliament, and a law thereupon made, it frees the King, and leaves him to give recompence only where he shall be pleased to intend grace. Wherefore we conceive the most convenient way will be, if some grave and discreet gentleman of the country, such as have lost relation to the court, make, at fit times, some modest motion touching the same; and that his Majesty would be graciously pleased to permit some law to pass (for the time past only, no ways touching his Majesty's regal power) to free the subjects from the same; and so his Majesty, after due consultation, to give way unto it.

For
For the third, we do humbly advise, that such of them, as his Majesty shall give way to have called in, may be questioned before the council-table, either as granted contrary to his Majesty's book of bounty, or found since to have been abused in the execution, or otherwise by experience discovered to be burdensome to the country. But herein we shall add this farther humble advice, that it be not done as matter of preparation to a parliament; but that occasion be taken, partly upon revising of the book of bounty, and partly upon the fresh examples in Sir Henry Yelverton's case of abuse and surreptition in obtaining of patents; and likewise, that it be but as a continuance in conformity of the council's former diligence and vigilancy, which hath already stayed and revoked divers patents of like nature, whereof we are ready to shew the examples. Thus, we conceive, his Majesty shall keep his greatness, and somewhat shall be done in parliament, and somewhat out of parliament, as the nature of the subject and business require.

We have sent his Majesty herewith a schedule of the particulars of these three kinds; wherein, for the first two, we have set down all that we could at this time discover: but in the latter, we have chosen out but some, that are most in speech, and do most tend, either to the vexation of the common people, or the discountenancing of our gentlemen and justices, the one being the original, the other the representative of the commons.

There being many more of like nature, but not of like weight, nor so much rumoured, which, to take away now in a blaze, will give more scandal, that such things were granted, than thanks, that they be now revoked.

And because all things may appear to his Majesty in the true light, we have set down, as well the suitors as the grants, and not only those, in whose names the patents were taken, but those, whom they concern, as far as comes to our knowledge.
For proclamations and commissions, they are tender things; and we are willing to meddle with them sparingly. For as for such, as do but wait upon patents (wherein his Majesty, as we conceived, gave some approbation to have them taken away,) it is better they fall away, by taking away the patent itself, than otherwise; for a proclamation cannot be revoked but by proclamation, which we avoid.

For those commonwealth bills, which his Majesty approved to be put in readiness, and some other things, there will be time enough hereafter to give his Majesty account, and amongst them, of the extent of his Majesty's pardon, which, if his subjects do their part, as we hope they will, we do wish may be more liberal than of later times, a pardon being the ancient remuneration in parliament.

Thus hoping his Majesty, out of his gracious and accustomed benignity, will accept of our faithful endeavours, and supply the rest by his own princely wisdom and direction; and also humbly praying his Majesty, that when he hath himself considered of our humble propositions, he will give us leave to impart them all, or as much as he shall think fit, to the Lords of his Council, for the better strength of his service, we conclude with our prayers for his Majesty's happy preservation, and always rest &c.

Indorsed,

The Lord Chancellor and the two Chief Justices to the King, concerning parliament business.

To the Lord Chancellor, and the Lord Mandeville, Lord Treasurer of England (*).

My honourable Lords,

His Majesty is pleased, according to your Lordships certificate, to rely upon your judgements,

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000.
Lord Chancellor BACON.

and hath made choice of Sir Robert Lloyd, Knight, to be Patentee and Master of the Office of ingrossing the Transcripts of all Wills and Inventories in the Prerogative-Courts, during his Highness's pleasure, and to be accountable unto his Majesty for such profits, as shall arise out of the same office. And his Majesty's farther pleasure is, that your Lordship forthwith proportion and set down, as well a reasonable rate of fees for the subject to pay for ingrossing the said transcripts, as also such fees, as your Lordship shall conceive fit to be allowed to the said patentee for the charge of clerks and ministers for execution of the said office. And to this effect his Majesty hath commanded me to signify his pleasure to his Solicitor General (g), to prepare a book for his Majesty's signature. And so I bid your Lordship heartily well to fare, and remain

Your Lordship's very loving friend,

Royston, December 17, 1620.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

I was so full of cold, as I could not attend his Majesty to-day. Yesterday I dispatched the proclamation with the council. There was a motion to have sharpened it; but better none, than over sharp at first. I moved the council also for supplying the committee for drawing of bills and some other matters, in regard of my Lord Hobart's (b) sickness, who, I think, will hardly escape: which, though it be happiness for him, yet it is loss for us.

(g) Sir Thomas Coventry.
(b) Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.
Mean while, as I propounded to the King, which he allowed well, I have broken the main of the parliament into questions and parts, which I send. It may be, it is an over-diligence; but still methinks there is a middle thing between art and chance: I think they call it providence, or some such thing, which good servants owe to their Sovereign, specially in cases of importance and straits of occasions. And those hurrying elections, and general licence of speech, ought to make us the better provided. The way will be, if his Majesty be pleased to peruse these questions advisedly, and give me leave to wait on him; and then refer it to some few of the council, a little to advise upon it. I ever rest

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,
and faithful servant,

December 23, 1620.

FR. VERULAM, CANC.

To the LORD CHANCELLOR (*).

My honourable Lord,

HIS Majestie hath commanded me to signify his pleasure unto your Lordship, that Sir Thomas Coventry, now his Sollicitor General, be forthwith made his Attorney General: and that your Lordship give order to the Clerk of the Crown to draw up a grant of the said place unto him accordingly. And so I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Whitehall, 9th of January, 1620.

G. BUCKINGHAM.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000.
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE been intreated to recommend unto your Lordship the distressed case of the Lady Martin, widow of Sir Richard Martin, deceased, who hath a cause to be heard before your Lordship in the Chancery, at your first sitting in the next term, between her and one Archer, and others, upon an ancient statute, due long since unto her husband; which cause, I am informed, hath received three verdicts for her in the common law, a decree in the Exchequer-Chamber, and a dismission before your Lordship: which I was the more willing to do, because I have seen a letter of his Majesty to the said Sir Richard Martin, acknowledging the good service, that he did him in this Kingdom, at the time of his Majesty's being in Scotland. And therefore I desire your Lordship, that you would give her a full and fair hearing of her cause, and a speedy dispatch thereof, her poverty being such, that having nothing to live on but her husband's debts, if her suit long depend, she shall be inforced to lose her cause for want of means to follow it: wherein I will acknowledge your Lordship's favour, and rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant,

Whitehall, the 13th of January, 1620.

G. Buckingham.

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000.
To the Lord Chancellor(*).

My honourable Lord,

His Majesty hath commanded me to signify his pleasure unto you, that you give present order to the Clerk of the Crown to draw a bill to be signed by his Majesty for Robert Heath, late Recorder of London, to be his Majesty’s Solicitor General. So I rest

Your Lordship’s faithful friend and servant,


To the King(i).

May it please your Majesty,

I thank God I number days, both in thankfulness to him, and in warning to myself. I should likewise number your Majesty’s benefits, which, as, to take them in all kinds, they are without number; so even in this kind of steps and degrees of advancement, they are in greater number, than scarcely any other of your subjects can say. For this is now the eighth time, that your Majesty hath raised me.

You formed me of the learned council extraordinary, without patent or fee, a kind of individuum vagum. You established me, and brought me into ordinary. Soon after, you placed me Solicitor, where I served seven years. Then your Majesty made me your Attorney, or Procurator

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000.

(i) This seems to have been written by Lord St. Albans, just after he was created a Viscount by that title, January 27, 1620.
General; then Privy Councillor, while I was Attorney; a kind of miracle of your favour, that had not been in many ages: thence Keeper of your Seal; and, because that was a kind of planet, and not fixed, Chancellor: and, when your Majesty could raise me no higher, it was your grace to illustrate me with beams of honour, first making me Baron Verulam, and now Viscount St. Alban. So this is the eighth rise or reach, a diapason in music, even a good number, and accord for a close. And so I may, without superstitition, be buried in St. Alban's habit or vestment.

Besides the number, the obligation is increased by three notes or marks: first, that they proceed from such a King; for honours from some Kings are but great cancels, or counters, set high; but from your Majesty, they are indeed dignities, by the co-operation of your grace. Secondly, in respect of the continuance of your Majesty's favour, which proceedeth, as the divine favour, from grace to grace. And, thirdly, these splendors of honour are like your freest patents, absque aliquid inde reddendo. Offices have burdens of cares and labours; but honours have no burden but thankfulness, which doth rather raise men's spirits, than accable them, or press them down.

Then I must say, quid retribuam? I have nothing of mine own. That, that God hath given me, I shall present unto your Majesty; which is care and diligence, and assiduous endeavour, and that, which is the chief, cor unum et viam unam; hoping, that your Majesty will do, as your superior doth; that is, finding my heart upright, you will bear with my other imperfections. And lastly, your Majesty shall have the best of my time, which, I assure myself, I shall conclude in your favour, and survive in your remembrance. And that is my prayer for myself. The rest shall be in prayers for your Majesty. 

S
To the Lord Chancellor (*).

My noble Lord,

I HAVE shewed your letter of thanks to his Majesty, who faith there are too many thanks in it for so small a favour; which he holdeth too little to encourage so well a deserving servant. For myself, I shall ever rejoice at the manifestation of his Majesty’s favour toward you, and will contribute all, that is in me, to the increasung of his good opinion; ever resting

Your Lordship’s faithful friend and servant,

G. BUCKINGHAM.

Speech of the Lord Viscount St. ALBAN, Lord Chancellor, to the parliament, January 30, 1620.

My Lords and Masters,

YOU have heard the King’s speech; and it makes me call to mind what Solomon faith, who was also a King: The words of the wise are as nails and pins, driven in and fastened by the masters of assemblies. The King is the master of this assembly; and though his words, in regard of the sweetness of them, do not prick; yet, in regard of the weight and wisdom of them, I know they pierce through and through; that is, both into your memories, and into your affections; and there I leave them.

As the King himself hath declared unto you the causes of the convoking of this parliament; so he hath commanded me to set before you the true insti-

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000.
tution and use of a parliament, that thereby you may take your aim, and govern yourselves the better in parliament matters: for then are all things in best state, when they are preserved in their primitive institution; for otherwise, ye know the principle of philosophy to be, that the corruption or degeneration of the best things is the worst.

The Kings of this realm have used to summon their parliaments or estates for three ends or purposes; for advice, for assent, and for aid.

For advice, it is no doubt great surety for Kings to take advice and information from their parliament. It is advice, that proceedeth out of experience: it is not speculative or abstract. It is a well-tried advice, and that passeth many revenues, and hath Argus's eyes. It is an advice, that commonly is free from private and particular ends, which is the bane of counsel. For although some particular members of parliament may have their private ends; yet one man sets another upright; so that the resultate of their counsels is, for the most part, direct and sincere. But this advice is to be given with distinction of the subjects: they are to tender and offer their advice by bill or petition, as the case requires. But in these things, that are Arcana Imperii, and reserved points of sovereignty, as making of war or peace, or the like, there they are to apply their advice to that, which shall be communicated unto them by the King, without pressing farther within the vail, or reaching forth to the forbidden fruit of knowledge. In these things the rule holds, tantum permìssum quantum commìssum.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

With due thanks for your last visit, this day is a play-day for me. But I will wait on your Lordship, if it be necessary.

I do hear from divers of judgement, that tomorrow’s conference (k) is like to pass in a calm, as to the referees (l). Sir Lionel Cranfield, who hath been formerly the trumpet, said yesterday, that he did now incline to Sir John Walter’s opinion and motion, not to have the referees meddled with otherwise, than to discount it from the King; and to not to look back, but to the future. And I do hear almost all men of judgement in the House wish now that way. I woo no body: I do but listen, and I have doubt only of Sir Edward Coke, who, I wish, had some round caveat given him from the King; for your Lordship hath no great power with him: but I think a word from the King mutes him.

If things be carried fair by the committees of the Lower House, I am in some doubt, whether there will be occasion for your Lordship to speak to-morrow; though, I confess, I incline to wish you did, chiefly because you are fortunate in that kind; and, to be plain also, for our better countenance, when your Lordship, according to your noble proposition,

(k) On Monday the 5th of March, 162?, the House of Lords received a message from the Commons, desiring a conference touching certain grievances, principally concerning Sir Giles Mompesson. See Journal of the House of Lords.

(l) those, to whom the King referred the petitions, to consider, whether they were fit to be granted or no. This explanation of the word referees I owe to a note in a MS. letter, written to the celebrated Mr. Joseph Mead of Christ’s College, Cambridge.
shall shew more regard of the fraternity you have with great counsellors, than of the interest of your natural brother.

Always, good my Lord, let us think of times out of parliament, as well as the present time in parliament, and let us not all be put es pourpoint. Fair and moderate courses are ever best in causes of estate; the rather, because I wish this parliament, by the sweet and united passages thereof, may increase the King's reputation with foreigners, who may make a far other judgement than we mean, of a beginning to question great counsellors and officers of the crown, by courts, or assemblies of estates. But the reflection upon my particular in this makes me more sparing, than perhaps, as a counsellor, I ought to be. God ever preserve and prosper you.

Your Lordship's true servant all and ever,

March 7, the day I received the seal, 1620.

FR. ST. ALBAN, Cant.

To the King (m).

It may please your Majesty,

I RECEIVED your Majesty's letter about midnight: and because it was stronger than the ancient summons of the Exchequer, which is, sicut teipsum

(m) The date of this letter is determined to be the 8th of March, 162?, from the circumstance of its being mentioned to have been written on that Thursday, on which the House of Lords adjourned to the Saturday following. It appears from the Journal of that House, that on the 8th of March, 1620, the said House, at which were present the Prince of Wales and Marquis of Buckingham, was adjourned to Saturday the 10th, on which day a conference of both Houses was held relating to the complaint of that of the Commons against Sir Giles Mompeston. Of this conference the Lord Chancellor made report on Monday, March 12,
Letters, &c. of

... whereas this was sicut me diligis; I used all possible care to effect your Majesty's good will and pleasure.

I sent early to the Prince, and to my Lord Treasurer; and we attended his Highness, soon after seven of the clock, at Whitehall, to avoid farther note. We agreed, that, if the message came, we would put the Lords into this way, that the answer should be, that we understood they came, prepared both with examination and precedent; and we likewise desired to be alike prepared, that the conference might be with more fruit.

I did farther speak with my Lord of Canterbury, when I came to the House, not letting him know any part of the business, that he would go on with a motion, which he had told me of the day before, that the Lords House might not sit Wednesday and Friday, because they were convocation-days; and so was the former custom of parliament.

As good luck was, the House read two bills, and had no other business at all: whereupon my Lord of Canterbury made his motion; and I adjourned the House till Saturday. It was no sooner done, but came the message from the Lower House. But the consummation est was past, though I perceived a great willingness, in many of the Lords, to have recalled it, if it might have been.

to the House of Lords, remarking, that "the inducement to this conference was to clear the King's honour, touching grants to Sir Giles, and the passages in procuring the same." After this report of the conference, the Lord Chamberlain, William Earl of Pembroke, complained to the House, that two great Lords, meaning the Lord Chancellor and the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Viscount Mandeville, had, in that conference, spake in their own defence, not being allowed to do so when the committees were named. Upon which both the Lords acknowledged their error, and begged pardon of the House.
So with my best prayers for your Majesty's preservation, I rest

Your Majesty's most bounden
and most devoted servant,

Thursday, at eleven of
our forenoon [March 8, 1620.]

FR. ST. ALBAN, Canc.

To the Marquis of Buckingham (a).

My very good Lord,

Y OUR Lordship spoke of purgatory. I am now in it; but my mind is in a calm; for my fortune is not my felicity. I know I have clean hands, and a clean heart; and, I hope, a clean house for friends or servants. But Job himself, or whosoever was the justest judge, by such hunting for matters against him, as hath been used against me, may for a time seem foul, especially in a time, when greatness is the mark, and accusation is the game. And if this be to be a Chancellor, I think, if the great seal lay upon Hounslow Heath, no body would take it up. But the King and your Lordship will, I hope, put an end to these my straits one way or other. And in troth that, which I fear most, is, left continual attendance and business, together with these cares, and want of time to do my weak body right this spring by diet and physic, will cast me down; and that it will be thought feigning, or fainting. But I hope in God I shall hold out. God prosper you.

(a) This letter seems to have been written soon after Lord St. Alban began to be accused of abuses in his office of Chancellor.
To the Chancellor of the Duchy, Sir Humphrey May.

Good Mr. Chancellor,

THERE will come, upon Friday, before you a patent (p) of his Majesty's for the separation of the company of apothecaries from the company of grocers, and their survey, and the erecting them into a corporation of themselves under the survey of the physicians. It is, as I conceive, a fair business both for law and conveniency, and a work, which the King made his own, and did, and, as I hear, doth take much to heart. It is in favorem vitae, where the other part is in favorem lucri. You may perhaps think me partial to apothecaries, that have been ever pudding in physic all my life. But there is a circumstance, that touches upon me but post diem, for it is comprehended in the charge and sentence passed upon me. It is true, that after I had put the seal to the patent, the apothecaries (q) presented me with

(p) The patent for incorporating the apothecaries by themselves, by the appellation of The Masters, Wardens, and Society of the Art and Mystery of Apothecaries of London, was dated December 6, 1617. They had been incorporated with the company of grocers, April 9, 1606.

(q) His Lordship being charged by the House of Commons, that he had received 100l. of the new company of apothecaries, that stood against the grocers, as likewise a taller of gold worth between 400 and 500l. with a present of ambergrise, from the apothecaries that stood with the grocers, and 200l. of the grocers; he admits the several sums to have been received of the three parties, but alleges, “that he considered those presents as no judicial business, but a concord of composition between the parties; and as he thought they had all three received good, and they were all common purses, he thought it the less matter to receive what they voluntarily presented; for if he had taken it in the nature of a bribe, he knew it could not be concealed, because it must be put to the account of the three several companies.”
an hundred pounds. It was no judicial affair. But
howsoever, as it may not be defended, so I would be
\[\text{glad it were not raked up more than needs. I doubt}
\]
only the chair (r), because I hear he useth names
\[\text{sharply; and besides, it may be, he hath a tooth at}
\]
me yet, which is not fallen out with age. But the
\[\text{best is, as one faith, satis est lapsos non erigere; urgere}
\]
verò jacentes; aut præcipitantes impellere, certè est inhu-
\[\text{manum. Mr. Chancellor, if you will be nobly}
\]
pleased to grace me upon this occasion, by shewing
\[\text{tenderness of my name, and commiseration of my}
\]
fortune, there is no man in that assembly, from
\[\text{whose mouth I had rather it should come. I hope it}
\]
will be no dishonour to you. It will oblige me much,
\[\text{and be a worthy fruit of our last reintegration of}
\]
friendship. I rest

Your faithful friend to do you service.

(Memoranda of what the Lord Chancellor intended to deliver to the King, April 16, 1621 (s),
upon his first access to his Majesty after his troubles.)

THAT howsoever it goeth with me, I think
\[\text{myself infinitely bound to his Majesty for ad-
}\]
mitting me to touch the hem of his garment; and
\[\text{that, according to my faith, so be it unto me.}
\]

The

(r) Sir Robert Philips was Chairman of the Committee of the
\[\text{House of Commons for inquiring into the abuses of the courts}
\]
of justice. He was son of Sir Edward Philips, Master of the
\[\text{Rolls, who died September 11, 1614, being succeeded by Sir}
\]
Julius Cæsar, to whom the King had given, January 16, 1615,
\[\text{under the great seal, the reversion of that post.}
\]

(s) A committee of the House of Commons had been appointed
\[\text{about the 12th of March, 1626, to inspect the abuses of the}
\]
courts of justice, of which Sir Edward Sackville was named the
Chairman, but by reason of some indisposition, Sir Robert Phi-
\[\text{lips}
\]
That I ought also humbly to thank his Majesty for that, in that excellent speech of his, which is printed, that lips was chosen in his room. The first thing they fell upon was bribery and corruption, of which the Lord Chancellor was accused by Mr. Christopher Aubrey and Mr. Edward Egerton, who affirmed, that they had procured money to be given to his Lordship to promote their causes depending before him. This charge being corroborated by some circumstances, a report of it was made from the committee to the House, on Thursday the 15th of March; and a second, on the 17th, of other matters of the same nature charged upon his Lordship. The heads of the accusation having been drawn up, were presented by the Commons to the Lords, in a conference on Monday the 19th of the same month. The subject of this conference being reported, the next day, to the House of Lords by the Lord Treasurer, the Marquis of Buckingham presented to their Lordships a letter to them from the Lord Chancellor, dated that day. Upon this letter, answer was sent from the Lords to the Lord Chancellor, on the 20th, that they had received his letter, and intended to proceed in his cause, now before them, according to the rule of justice, desiring his Lordship to provide for his just defence. The next day, March 21, the Commons sent to the Lords a farther charge against the Lord Chancellor; and their Lordships, in the mean time, examined the complaints against him, and witnesses in the House, and appointed a select committee of themselves to take examinations likewise. Towards the latter end of March, the session was discontinued for some time, in hopes, as it was imagined, of softening the Lord Chancellor's fall: but upon the re-assembling of the parliament, more complaints being daily represented, on Wednesday, April 24, the Prince signified unto the Lords, that his Lordship had sent a submission, dated the 22d. Which the Lords having considered, and heard the collection of corruptions charged on him, and the proofs read, they sent a copy of the same, without the proofs, to him by Baron Denham and Mr. Attorney General, with this message, that his Lordship's confession was not fully set down by him; and that they had therefore sent him the particular charge, and expected his answer to it with all convenient expedition. To which he answered, that he would return their Lordships an answer with speed. On the 25th of April, the Lords considered of his said answer, and sent a second message by the same persons, that having received a doubtful answer to their message, sent him the day before, they now sent to him again, to know directly and presently, whether his Lordship would make his confession, or stand upon his defence. His answer returned by the same messengers was, that
that speech of so great maturity, wherein the elements are so well mingled, by kindling affection, by washing away aspersion, by establishing of opinion, and yet giving way to opinion, I do find some passages, which I do construe to my advantage.

And lastly, that I have heard from my friends, that notwithstanding these waves of information, his Majesty mentions my name with grace and favour.

In the next place, I am to make an oblation of myself into his Majesty's hands, that, as, I wrote to him, I am as clay in his hands, his Majesty may make a vessel of honour or dishonour of me, as I find favour in his eyes; and that I submit myself wholly to his grace and mercy, and to be governed both in my cause and fortunes by his direction, knowing, that his heart is inscrutable for good. Only I may express myself thus far, that my desire is, that the thread, or line, or my life, may be no longer than the thread, or line, of your service: I mean, that I may be of use to your Majesty in one kind or other.

Now for any farther speech, I would humbly pray his Majesty, that whatsoever the law of nature shall teach me to speak for my own preservation, your Majesty will understand it to be in such sort, as I do nevertheless depend wholly upon your will and pleasure. And under this submission, if your Majesty

he would make no manner of defence, but meant to acknowledge corruption, and to make a particular confession to every point, and after that an humble submission; but humbly crave liberty, that where the charge was more full than he finds the truth of the fact, he may make declaration of the truth in such particulars, the charge being brief, and containing not all circumstances. The Lords sent the same messengers, to let him know, that they granted him time to do this till the Monday following; when he sent his confession, and submission; which being avowed by him to several Lords, sent to him, the Lords resolved, on the 2d of May, to proceed to sentence him the next morning, and summoned him to attend; which he excusing, on account of being confined to his bed by sickness, they gave judgement accordingly, on the 3d of May, 1621.
will graciously give me the hearing, I will open my heart unto you, both touching my fault, and fortune. For the former of these, I shall deal ingenuously with your Majesty, without seeking fig-leaves, or subterfuges.

There be three degrees, or cases, as I conceive, of gifts and rewards given to a Judge.

The first is of bargain, contract, or promise of reward, *pendente lite*. And this is properly called *venalis sententia*, or *baratia*, or *corrupteae munerum*. And of this, my heart tells me, I am innocent; that I had no bribe or reward in my eye or thought, when I pronounced any sentence or order.

The second is a neglect in the Judge to inform himself, whether the cause be fully at an end, or no, what time he receives the gift; but takes it upon the credit of the party, that all is done; or otherwise omits to inquire.

And the third is, when it is received *fine fraude*, after the cause ended; which, it seems by the opinion of the civilians, is no offence. Look into the case of simony, &c.

---

Draught of another paper to the same purpose.

THERE be three degrees, or cases, of bribery, charged, or supposed, in a Judge:

The first, of bargain, or contract, for reward to pervert justice.

The second, where the Judge conceives the cause to be at an end, by the information of the party, or otherwise, and useth not such diligence, as he ought, to inquire of it. And the third, when the cause is really ended, and it is *fine fraude*, without relation to any precedent promise.

Now
Now if I might see the particulars of my charge, I should deal plainly with your Majesty, in whether of these degrees every particular case falls.

But for the first of them, I take myself to be as innocent, as any born upon St. Innocents's day, in my heart.

For the second, I doubt in some particulars I may be faulty.

And for the last, I conceived it to be no fault; but therein I desire to be better informed, that I may be twice penitent, once for the fact, and again for the error. For I had rather be a briber, than a defender of bribes.

I must likewise confess to your Majesty, that at New-year's tides, and likewise at my first coming in (which was, as it were, my wedding) I did not so precisely, as perhaps I ought, examine, whether those, that presented me, had causes before me, yea or no.

And this is simply all, that I can say for the present, concerning my charge, until I may receive it more particularly. And all this while, I do not fly to that, as to say, that these things are vitia temporis, and not vitia hominis.

For my fortune, summa summorum with me is, that I may not be made altogether unprofitable to do your Majesty's service, or honour. If your Majesty continue me as I am, I hope I shall be a new man, and shall reform things out of feeling, more than another can do out of example. If I cast part of my burden, I shall be more strong and délivré to bear the rest. And, to tell your Majesty what my thoughts run upon, I think of writing a story of England, and of recomposing of your laws into a better digest.

But to conclude, I most humbly pray your Majesty's directions and advice. For as your Majesty hath used to give me the attribute of care of your business; so I must now cast the care of myself upon God and you.
Notes upon Michael de la Pole's Case.

10 Rich. 2. The offences were of three natures:
1. Deceits to the King.
2. Misgovernment in point of estate, whereby the ordinances, made by ten Commissioners for reformation of the state, were frustrated, and the city of Ghent, in foreign parts, lost.
3. And his setting the seal to pardons for murders, and other enormous crimes.

The judgement was imprisonment, fine, and ransom, and restitution to the King, but no disablement, nor making him incapable, no degrading in honour mentioned in the judgement: but contrary-wise, in the clause, that restitution should be made and levied out of his lands and goods, it is expressly said, that because his honour of Earl was not taken from him, therefore his 20l. per annum creation money should not be meddled with.

Observations upon Thorpe's Case.

24 Edw. 3. His offence was taking of money from five several persons, that were felons, for staying their process of exigent; for that it made him a kind of accessory of felony, and touched upon matter capital.

The judgement was the judgement of felony: but the proceeding had many things strong and new; first, the proceeding was by commission of oyer and terminer, and by jury; and not by parliament.

The judgement is recited to be given in the King's high and sovereign power.

(t) This paper was probably drawn up on occasion of the proceedings and judgement passed upon the Lord Viscount St. Alban by the House of Lords, May 3, 1621.
Lord Chancellor BACON

It is recited likewise, that the King, when he made him Chief Justice, and increased his wages, did ore tenus say to him, in the presence of his council, that now, if he bribed, he would hang him: unto which penance (for so the record called it) he submitted himself. So it was a judgement by a contract.

His oath likewise, which was devised some few years before, which is very strict in words, that he shall take no reward, neither before nor after, is chiefly insisted upon. And that, which is more to be observed, there is a precise proviso, that the judgement and proceeding shall not be drawn into example against any, and specially not against any, who have not taken the like oath: which the Lord Chancellor, Lord Treasurer, Master of the Wards, &c. take not, but only the Judges of both Benches, and Baron of the Exchequer.

The King pardoned him presently after, doubting, as it seems, that the judgement was erroneous both in matter and form of proceeding; brought it before the Lords of Parliament, who affirmed the judgement, and gave authority to the King in the like cases, for the time to come, to call to him what Lords it pleased him, and to adjudge them.

Notes upon Sir John Lee's Case, Steward of the King's Household,

44. Edw. 3. His offences were great oppressions in usurpation of authority, in attacking and imprisoning in the Tower, and other prisons, numbers of the King's subjects, for causes no ways appertaining to his jurisdiction; and for discharging an appellant of felony without warrant, and for deceit of the King, and extortions.

His judgement was only imprisonment in the Tower, until he had made a fine and ransom at the King's will; and no more.
Notes upon Lord Latimer's Case.

50 Edw. 3. His offences were very high and heinous, drawing upon high treason: as the extortious taking of victuals in Bretagne to a great value, without paying any thing; and for ransoming divers parishes there to the sum of 83,000 l. contrary to the articles of truce proclaimed by the King; for suffering his Deputies and Lieutenants in Bretagne to exact, upon the towns and countries there, divers sums of money, to the sum of 150,000 crowns; for sharing with Richard Lyons, in his deceit of the King; for inlarging, by his own authority, divers felons; and divers other exorbitant offences.

Notwithstanding all this, his judgement was only to be committed to the Marshalsea, and to make fine and ransom at the King's will.

But after, at the suit of the Commons, in regard of those horrible and treasonable offences, he was displaced from his office, and disabled to be of the King's Council; but his honours not touched, and he was presently bailed by some of the Lords, and suffered to go at large.

John Lord Neville's Case.

50 Edw. 3. His offences were the not supplying the full number of the soldiers in Bretagne, according to the allowance of the King's pay. And the second was for buying certain debts, due from the King, to his own lucre, and giving the parties small recompence, and specially in a case of the Lady Ravenholme.

And it was prayed by the Commons, that he might be put out of office about the King: but there was no judgement given upon that prayer, but only of restitution to the Lady, and a general clause of being punished according to his demerits.
To the Count Gondomar, Ambassador from the court of Spain.

Illustrissime Domine Legate,


Deus illustrissimam Dominationem tuam incolorem ferveret et prosperam.

Servus tuus,

Junii 6, 1621.

FR. ST. ALBAN.

To Count Gondomar (u).

Illustrissime et excellentiissime Domine,

PERSPEXI et agnosco providentiam divinam, quod in tantâ solitudine mihi tanquam coeli- tus suscitaverit talen amicum, qui tantis implicatus negotiis, et in tantis temporis anguilliis, curam mei habuerit, idque pro me effecerit, quod alii amici mei aut non aui sint tentare, aut obtinere non potuerint. Atque illustrissimæ Dominationis tuae reddent fructum

(u) In the Letters, Memoirs, &c. of the Lord Chancellor Bacon, published by Mr. Stephens, in 1736, p. 517, is a Spanish letter to him from Count Gondomar, dated at London, June 14, 1621.
proprium et perpetuum mores tu in tam generosi, et erga omnia officia humanitatis et honoris propensi; neque erit forte in inter opera tua hoc minimum, quod me, qui et aliquid fui apud vivos, neque omnino intermiar apud posteros, ope et gratia tua ereveris, confirmatis. Ego quid possum? Ero tandem tuus, si minus usufructu, at saltem affectu, votu. Sub cineribus fortunae vivi erunt semper ignes amoris. Te igitur humillimì saluto, tibi valedico, omnia prospera exopto, gratitudinem teftor, ob fervantiam polliceor.

Iullofrifimo et excellentifimo Do. Do. Didaco Sarmiento de Acula, Comiti de Gondamar, Legato Regis Hispamiarum extraordinario in Anglia.

To the Marquis of Buckingham (w).

My very good Lord,

I HUMBLY thank your Lordship for the grace and favour, which you did both to the message and messenger, in bringing Mr. Meautys to his Majesty's hands, and to receive his pleasure. My riches in my adversity hath been, that I have had a good master, a good friend, and a good servant.

Perceiving, by Mr. Meautys, his Majesty's inclination, it shall be, as it hath ever used to be to me, instead of a direction; and therefore I purpose to go forthwith to Gorhambury, humbly thanking his Majesty nevertheless, that he was graciously pleased to have acquainted my Lords with my desire, if it had stood me so much upon. But his Majesty knoweth

(w) This letter is reprinted here, because it differs, in some respects, from that published in Letters, Memoirs, Parliamentary Affairs, State Papers, &c. by Robert Stephens, Esq; p. 151. Edit. London, 1736, 4to.
beft the times and feafons; and to his grace I submit myself, defiring his Majefty and your Lordfhip to take my letters from the Tower as written de profundis, and those I continue to write to be ex aquis falsis.

[June 22, 1621.]

Indorfed,

To Lord Buckingham, upon bringing Mr. Meautys to kifs the King's hands.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I HAVE written, as I thought it decent in me to do, to his Majefty the letter I fend inclofed. I have great faith, that your Lordfhip, now nobly and like yourself, will effect with his Majefty. In this the King is of himfelf, and it hath no relation to parliament. I have written also, as your Lordfhip advised me, only touching that point of means. I have lived hitherto upon the scraps of my former fortunes; and I shall not be able to hold out longer. Therefore I hope your Lordfhip will now, according to the loving promises and hopes given, settle my poor fortunes, or rather my being. I am much fallen in love with a private life; but yet I shall fo spend my time, as shall not decay my abilities for ufe.

God preferve and prosper your Lordfhip.

[Sept. 5, 1621.]

To the Prince.

May it please your Highnefs,

I CANNOT too oft acknowledge your Highnefs's favour in my troubles; but acknowledgement now is but begging of new favour. Yet even that is not
not inconvenient; for thanksgiving and petition go well together, even to God himself. My humble suit to your Highness, that I may be thought on for means to subsist; and to that purpose, that your Highness will join with my noble friend to the King. That done, I shall ever be ready, either at God's call, or his Majesty's, and as happy, to my thinking, as a man can be, that must leave to serve such a King.

God preserve and prosper your Highness.

On the back of the draughts of the three preceding letters were written the following memoranda.

Bishops Winchester (x), Durham (y), London (z).

Lord Duke (a), Lord Hunsdon.

Lord Chamberlain (b), to thank him for his kind remembrance by you; and though in this private fortune I shall have use of few friends, yet I cannot but acknowledge the moderation and affection his Lordship shewed in my business, and desire, that of those few his Lordship will still be one for my comfort, in whatsoever may cross his way, for the furtherance of my private life and fortune.

Mr. John Murray. If there be any thing, that may concern me, that is fit for him to speak, and me to know, that I may receive it by you.

Mr. Maxwell. That I am sorry, that so soon as I came to know him, and to be beholding to him, I wanted power to be of use to him.

Lord of Kelly; and to acquaint him with that part touching the confinement.

(x) Dr. Andrews.  (y) Dr. Richard Neile.

(z) Dr. George Mountain.  (a) Lenox.

(b) William, Earl of Pembroke.
To the King.

It may please your Majesty,

Now that your Majesty hath passed the recreation of your progress, there is nevertheless one kind of recreation, which, I know, remaineth with your Majesty all the year; which is to do good, and to exercise your clemency and beneficence. I shall never measure my poor service by the merit, which perhaps is small, but by the acceptation, which hath been always favourably great. I have served your Majesty now seventeen years; and since my first service (which was in the commission of the union,) I received from your Majesty never chiding or rebuke, but always sweetness and thanks. Neither was I, in these seventeen years, ever chargeable to your Majesty, but got my means in an honourable sweat of my labour, save that of late your Majesty was graciously pleased to bestow upon me the pension of twelve hundred pounds for a few years. For in that other poor prop of my estate, which is the farming of the petty writs, I improved your Majesty's revenue by four hundred pounds the year. And likewise, when I received the seal, I left both the Attorney's place, which was a gainful place, and the Clerkship of the Star-Chamber, which was Queen Elizabeth's favour, and was worth twelve hundred pounds by the year, which would have been a good commendam. The honours, which your Majesty hath done me, have put me above the means to get my living; and the misery I am fallen into hath put me below the means to subsist as I am. I hope my courses shall be such, for this little end of my thread, which remaineth, as your Majesty, in doing me good, may do good to many, both that live now, and shall be born hereafter. I have been the keeper of your seal, and
LETTERS, &c. of
and now am your beadman. Let your own royal
heart, and my noble friend, speak the rest.
God preserve and prosper your Majesty.

Your Majesty’s faithful
poor servant and beadman,
September 5, 1621.

Fr. St. Alban.

Cardinal Wolsey said, that if he had pleased God
as he pleased the King, he had not been ruined. My
conscience faith no such thing; for I know not but
in serving you, I have served God in one. But it
may be, if I had pleased God, as I had pleased you,
it would have been better with me.

To the King,

It may please your most excellent Majesty,

DO very humbly thank your Majesty for your
gracious remission of my fine. I can now, I thank
God and you, die, and make a will.

I desire to do, for the little time God shall send
me life, like the merchants of London, which,
when they give over trade, lay out their money upon
land. So, being freed from civil business, I lay
forth my poor talent upon those things, which
may be perpetual, still having relation to do you
honour with those powers I have left.

I have therefore chosen to write the reign of King
Henry the VIIth, who was in a sort your forerunner,
and whose spirit, as well as his blood, is doubled
upon your Majesty.

I durst not have presumed to intreat your Majesty
to look over the book, and correct it, or at least to
signify
signify what you would have amended. But since you are pleased to send for the book, I will hope for it.

[(c) God knoweth, whether ever I shall see you again; but I will pray for you to the last gasp, resting]

The same, your true beadleman,
October 8, 1621.
FR. ST. ALBAN.

Grant of pardon to the Viscount St. Alban, under the privy seal (d).

A SPECIAL pardon granted unto Francis, Viscount St. Alban, for all felonies done and committed against the common laws and statutes of this realm; and for all offences of præmunire; and for all misprisions, riots, &c. with a restitution of all his lands and goods forfeited by reason of any the premises; except out of the same pardon all treasons, murders, rapes, incest; and except also all fines, imprisonments, penalties, and forfeitures adjudged against the said Viscount St. Alban by a sentence lately made in the parliament. Teste Rege apud Westm. 17 die Octob. anno Regni suo 19.
Per lettre de privato sigillo.

DR. WILLIAM'S, Bishop of Lincoln elect, and Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, to the Viscount St. Alban.

My very good Lord,

HAVING perused a privy seal, containing a pardon for your Lordship, and thought seriously thereupon, I find, that the passing of the

(c) This passage has a line drawn over it.
(d) Cotton Library, Titus Book VII.
LETTERS, &c. of

fame (the assembly in parliament so near approaching cannot but be much prejudicial to the service of the King, to the honour of my Lord of Buckingham, to that commiseration, which otherwise would be had of your Lordship's present estate, and especially to my judgement and fidelity. I have ever affectionately loved your Lordship's many and most excelling good parts and endowments; nor had ever cause to disaffect your Lordship's person. So as no respect in the world, beside the former considerations, could have drawn me to add the least affliction, or discontentment, unto your Lordship's present fortune. May it therefore please your Lordship to suspend the passing of this pardon, until the next assembly be over and dissolved; and I will be then as ready to seal it, as your Lordship to accept of it; and, in the mean time, undertake, that the King and my Lord Admiral shall interpret this short delay, as a service and respect issuing wholly from your Lordship; and rest, in all other offices whatsoever,

Your Lordship's faithful servant,

JO, LINCOLN, elei. Custos Sigilli,

Westminster-College,
October 18, 1621.

To the Right Honourable his very good Lord, the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

(c) It met November 24, 1621; and was dissolved, February 8, 1622.
My very good Lord,

I KNOW the reasons must appear to your Lordship many and weighty, which should move you to stop the King's grace, or to dissuade it; and somewhat the more in respect of my person, being, I hope, no unfit subject for noble dealing. The message I received by Mr. Meautys did import inconvenience, in the form of the pardon; your Lordship's last letter, in the time: for, as for the matter, it lay so fair for his Majesty's and my Lord of Buckingham's own knowledge, as I conceive your Lordship doth not aim at that. My affliction hath made me understand myself better, and not worse; yet loving advice, I know, helps well. Therefore I send Mr. Meautys to your Lordship, that I might reap so much your fruit of your Lordship's professed good affection, as to know in some more particular fashion, what it is that your Lordship doubteth, or disliketh (f); that I may the better endeavour your satisfaction, or acquiescence, if there be cause. So I rest

Your Lordship's to do you service,

October 18, 1621.

Fr. St. Alban.

(f) The Lord Keeper, in a letter to the Marquis of Buckingham, dated October 27, 1621, printed in the Cabala, p. 60. Edit. London, 1654, gives his reasons, why he hesitated to seal that pardon.
Petition of the Lord Viscount St. Alban, intended for the House of Lords.

My right honourable very good Lords,

In all humbleness, acknowledging your Lordships' justice, I do now in like manner crave and implore your grace and compassion. I am old, weak, ruined, in want, a very subject of pity. My only suit to your Lordships is to shew me your noble favour towards the release of my confinement (to every confinement is,) and to me, I protest, worse than the Tower (g). There I could have had company, physicians, conference with my creditors and friends about my debts, and the necessities of my estate, helps for my studies and the writings I have in hand. Here I live upon the sword-point of a sharp air, endangered, if I go abroad, dulled, if stay within, solitary and comfortless without company, banished from all opportunities to treat with any to do myself good, and to help out any wrecks; and that, which is one of my greatest griefs, my wife, that hath been no partaker of my offending, must be partaker of this misery of my restraint.

May it please your Lordships therefore, since there is a time for justice, and a time for misery, to think with compassion upon that, which I have already suffered, which is not little; and to recommend this my humble, and, as I hope, modest, suit to his most excellent Majesty, the fountain of grace, of whose merc-

(g) He had been committed to the Tower in May, 1621, and discharged after two days confinement there, according to Camden, Annals Regis Jacobi I. p. 71. There is a letter of his Lordship to the Marquis of Buckingham, dated from the Tower, May 31, 1621, desiring his Lordship to procure his discharge that day.
for so much as concerns himself merely, I have already tasted, and likewise of his favour of this very kind, by some small temporary dispensations.

Herein your Lordships shall do a work of charity and nobility: you shall do me good; you shall do my creditors good; and, it may be, you shall do posterity good, if out of the carcase of dead and rotten greatnes (as out of Samson's lion) there may be honey gathered for the use of future times.

God blest your persons and counsels.

Your Lordships supplicant and servant,

FR. ST. ALBAN.

Indorsed,

Copy of the petition intended for the House of Parliament.

To JOHN Lord DIGBY (b).

My very good Lord,

RECEIVING, by Mr. Johnson, your loving salutations, it made me call to mind many of your Lordship's tokens, yea and pledges, of good and hearty affection in both my fortunes; for which I shall be ever yours. I pray, my Lord, if occasion serve, give me your good word to the King, for the release of my confinement, which is to me a very strait kind of imprisonment. I am no Jesuit, nor no leper; but one, that served his Majesty these sixteen years, even from the commission of the union, till this last parliament, and ever had many thanks of his Majesty, and was never chidden. This his Ma-

(b) Created fo in November, 1618, and in September, 1622, Earl of Bristol.
LETTERS, &c. of

jefty, I know, will remember at one time or other; for I am his man still.

God keep your Lordship:

Your Lordship's most affectionate
to do you service,

Gorhambury, this last of December, 1621.

Fr. St. ALBAN.

To the Lord Viscount St. ALBAN (*).

My honourable Lord,

I HAVE received your Lordship's letter, and have been long thinking upon it, and the longer, the less able to make answer unto it. Therefore if your Lordship will be pleased to send any understanding man unto me, to whom I may, in discourse, open myself, I will, by that means, so discover my heart with all freedom, which were too long to do by letter, especially in this time of parliament business, that your Lordship shall receive satisfaction. In the mean time, I rest

Your Lordship's faithful servant,

Royston, December 16 [1621].

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

THE reason, why I was so desirous to have had conference with your Lordship at London, was indeed to save you the trouble of writing: I mean, the reason in the second place; for the chief was to see your Lordship. But since you are pleased to give me the liberty to send to your Lordship one, to whom you will deliver your mind, I take that in so good part, as I think

(*) Harl. MSS. Vol. 7000.

my-
myself tied the more to use that liberty modestly. Wherefore, if your Lordship will vouchsafe to send to me one of your own (except I might have leave to come to London,) either Mr. Packer, my ancient friend, or Mr. Aylesbury (i), of whose good affection towards me I have heard report; to me it shall be indifferent. But if your Lordship will have one of my nomination, if I might presume so far, I would name, before all others, my Lord of Falkland. But because perhaps it may cost him a journey, which I may not in good manners desire, I have thought of Sir Edward Sackville, Sir Robert Mansell, my brother, Mr. Solicitor General (k), (who, though he be almost a stranger to me, yet, as my case now is, I had rather employ a man of good nature than a friend,) and Sir Arthur Ingram, notwithstanding he be great with my Lord Treasurer. Of these, if your Lordship shall be pleased to prick one, I hope well I shall intreat him to attend your Lordship, and to be sorry never a whit of the employment. Your Lordship may take your own time to signify your will, in regard of the present business of parliament. But my time was confined, by due respect, to write a present answer to a letter, which I construed to be a kind letter, and such as giveth me yet hope to shew myself to your Lordship

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

Fr. St. Alban.

Indorsed,

To the Lord of Buckingham, in answer to bis of the 16th of December.

(i) Thomas Aylesbury, Esq; Secretary to the Marquis of Buckingham as Lord High-Admiral. He was created a Baronet in 1627. Lord Chancellor Clarendon married his daughter Frances.

(k) Sir Robert Heath, made Solicitor in January 14, 1627.
A Memorial of Conference, when the Lord Viscount St. Alban expelled the Marquis of Buckingham.

My Lord Marquis,

Inducement.] Afflictions are truly called trials; trials of a man's self, and trials of friends. For the first, I am not guilty to myself of any unworthines, except perhaps too much softness in the beginning of my troubles. But since, I praise God, I have not lived like a drone, nor like a mal-content, nor like a man confused. But though the world hath taken her talent from me, yet God's talent I put to use.

For trial of friends, he cannot have many friends, that hath chosen to rely upon one. So that is in a small room, ending in yourself. My suit therefore to you is, that you would now, upon this vouchsafed conference, open yourself to me, whether I stand in your favour and affection, as I have done; and if there be an alteration, what is the cause; and, if none, what effects I may expect for the future of your friendship and favour, my state being not unknown to you.

Reasons of doubting.] The reasons, why I should doubt of your Lordship's coolness towards me, or falling from me, are either out of judgement and discourse, or out of experience, and somewhat that I find. My judgment telleth, that when a man is out of sight and out of use, it is a nobleness somewhat above this age to continue a constant friend: that some, that are thought to have your ear, or more, love me not, and may either disvalue me, or displease your Lordship with me. Besides, your Lordship hath now so many, either new-purchased friends, or reconciled enemies, as there is scarce room for an old friend specially set aside.
And lastly, I may doubt, that that, for which I was fitted, which was to carry things suavibus modis, and not to bristle, or undertake, or give venturous counsels, is out of fashion and request.

As for that, I find your Lordship knoweth, as well as I, what promises you made me, and iterated them back by message, and from your mouth, consisting of three things: the pardon of the whole sentence; some help for my debts; and an annual pension, which your Lordship did set at 2000 l. as obtained, and 3000 l. in hope. Of these, being promises undesired, as well as favours undeserved, there is effected only the remission of the fine, and the pardon now stayed. From me I know there hath proceeded nothing, that may cause the change. These I lay before you, desiring to know, what I may hope for; for hopes are racks, and your Lordship, that would not condemn me to the Tower, I know will not condemn me to the rack.

The pardon stayed.] I have, though it be a thing trivial, and that at a coronation one might have it for five marks, and after a parliament for nothing, yet have great reason to desire it, specially being now stirred: chiefly, first, because I have been so lifted; and now it is time there were an end. Secondly, because I mean to live a retired life; and so cannot be at hand to shake off any clamour.

For any offence the parliament should take, it is rather honour, that in a thing, wherein the King is absolute, yet he will not interpose in that, which the parliament hath handled; and the King hath already restored judicature, after a long intermission: but for matter of his grace, his Majesty shall have reason to keep it intire.

I do not think any, except a Turk or Tartar, would wish to have another chop out of me. But the best is, it will be found there is a time for envy, and a time for pity; and cold fragments will not serve.
serve, if the stomach be on edge. For me, if they judge by that, which is past, they judge of the weather of this year by an almanack of the old year; they rather repent of that they have done, and think they have but served the turns of a few.

THOMAS MEAUTYS, Esq. (m) to the Lord Viscount ST. ALBAN.

May it please your Lordship,

As soon as I came to London, I repaired to Sir Edward Sackville (n), whom I find very zealous, as I told your Lordship. I left him to do your service, in any particular you shall command him, to my Lord Marquis (though it were with some adventure;) and withall he imparted to me what advice he had given to my Lady this afternoon, upon his visiting of her at York-house, when Mr. Packer also, as it fell out, was come, at the same time, to see my Lady; and seemed to concur with Sir Edward Sackville in the same ways; which were, for my Lady to become a suitor to my Lady Buckingham (o), and my Lady Marchioness (p), to work my Lord Marquis

(m) He had been Secretary to the Lord Viscount St. Alban, while his Lordship had the great seal, and was afterwards Clerk of the Council, and knighted. He succeeded his patron in the manor of Gorhambury, which, after the death of Sir Thomas, came to his cousin and heir, Sir Thomas Meautys, who married Anne, daughter of Sir Nathaniel Bacon of Culford-Hall in Suffolk, Knight; which Lady married a second husband, Sir Harbottle Grimston, Baronet, and Master of the Rolls; who purchased the reversion of Gorhambury from Sir Hercules Meautys, nephew of the second Sir Thomas.

(n) afterwards Earl of Dorset, well known for his duel, in 1613, with the Lord Kinloch, in which the latter was killed.

(o) Mary, Countess of Buckingham, mother of the Marquis.

(p) Catharine, Marchioness of Buckingham, wife of the Marquis, and only daughter and heir of Francis, Earl of Rutland.

2 for
for obtaining of the King some bounty towards your Lordship; and in particular, that of the thousand pounds for the small writs. If I may speak my opinion to your Lordship, it is not amiss to begin any way, or with any particular, though but small game at first, only to set a rusty clock a-going, and then haply it may go right for a time, enough to bring on the rest of your Lordship's requests. Yet because your Lordship directed me to wish my Lady, from you, by no means, to act any thing, but only to open her mind, in discourse, unto friends, until she should receive your farther direction; it became not me to be too forward in putting it on too fast with Sir Edward; and my Lady was pleased to tell me since, that she hath written to your Lordship at large.

I inquired, even now, of Benbow, whether the proclamation for dissolving the parliament were coming forth. He tells me, he knows no more certainty of it, than that Mr. Secretary commanded him yesterday to be ready for dispatching of the writs, when he should be called for: but since then, he hears it sticks, and endures some qualms; but they speak it still aloud at court, that the King is resolved of it.

Benbow tells me likewise, that he hath attended, these two days, upon a committee of the Lords, with the book of the commission of peace; and that their work is to empty the commission in some counties by the score, and many of them parliament-men: which course sure helps to ring the passing-bell to the parliament.

Mr. Borough (q) tells me, he is at this present pain

(q) John Borough, educated in common law at Gray's Inn, Keeper of the Records in the Tower of London, Secretary to the Earl Marshal, in 1623 made Norroy; in July the year following knighted, and on the 23d of December, the same year, made Garter King at Arms in the place of Sir William Segar. He died October 21, 1643.
to attend some service for the King; but about Saturday he hopes to be at liberty to wait upon your Lordship. I humbly rest

Your Lordship's for ever to honour and serve,

January 3, 1621. T. MEAUTYS.

To the Right Honourable my most honoured Lord, the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

To the Lord Viscount ST. ALBAN.

May it please your Lordship,

THIS afternoon my Lady found access to my Lord Marquis, procured for her by my Lord of Montgomery (r), and Sir Edward Sackville, who seemed to contend, which of them should shew most patience in waiting (which they did a whole afternoon) the opportunity to bring my Lord to his chamber, where my Lady attended him. But when he was come, she found time enough to speak at large: and though my Lord spake so loud, as that what passed was no secret to me and some others, that were within hearing; yet, because my Lady told me she purposed to write to your Lordship the whole passage, it becomes not me to anticipate, by these, any part of her Ladyship's relation.

I send your Lordship herewith the proclamation for dissolving the parliament; wherein there is nothing forgotten, that we (s) have done amiss: but for most of those things, that we have well done, we must be fain, I see, to commend ourselves,

(r) Philip, afterwards Earl of Pembroke.
(s) Mr. Meautys was Member, in this Parliament, for the town of Cambridge.
I delivered your Lordship's to my Lord of Montgomery, and Mr. Matthew, who was even then come to York-house to visit my Lady, when I received the letter; and, as soon as he had read it, he said, that he had rather your Lordship had sent him a challenge; and that it had been easier to answer, than so noble and kind a letter. He intends to see your Lordship some time this week; and so doth Sir Edward Sackville, who is forward to make my Lady a way by the Prince, if your Lordship advise it.

There are packets newly come out of Spain: and the King, they say, seems well pleased with the contents; wherein there is an absolute promise, and undertaking, for restitution of the Palatinate; the dispensation returned already from the Pope, and the match hastened on their parts. My Lord Digby goes shortly; and Mr. Matthew tells me, he means, before his going, to write by him to your Lordship.

The King goes not till Wednesday, and the Prince certainly goes with him. My Lord Marquis, in person, christs my Lord of Falkland's child to-morrow, at his house by Watford.

Mr. Murray (t) tells me, the King hath given your book (u) to my Lord Brooke (w), and injoined him to read it, recommending it much to him: and then my Lord Brooke is to return it to your Lordship; and so it may go to the press, when your Lordship pleases, with such amendments, as the King hath made, which I have seen, and are very few, and those rather words, as epidemic, and mild instead of debonnaire, &c. Only that of persons attainted, enabled to serve in parliament by a bare reversal of their attainder, the King by all

(t) Thomas Murray, Tutor and Secretary to the Prince, made Provost of Eton-College, in the room of Sir Henry Savile, who died February 19, 1623. Mr. Murray died likewise, April 1, 1623.

(u) The History of the Reign of King Henry the Seventh.

(w) Fulk Grevile.

means
means will have left out. I met with my Lord Brooke, and told him, that Mr. Murfay had directed me to wait upon him for the book, when he had done with it. He desired to be spared this week, as being to him a week of much business; and the next week I should have it: and he ended in a compliment, that care should be taken, by all means, for good ink and paper to print it in; for that the book deserveth it.

I beg leave to kiss your Lordship's hands.

Your Lordship's in all humbleness
to honour and serve,

January 7, 1624.

T. MEAUTYS.

This proclamation is not yet sealed; and therefore your Lordship may please, as yet, to keep it in your own hands.

To the Lord Viscount St. ALBAN.

My most honoured Lord,

I MET, even now, with a piece of news so unexpected, and yet so certainly true, as that, howsoever I had much ado, at first, to desire the relation to speak probably; yet now I dare send it your Lordship upon my credit. It is my Lord of Somerset's and his Lady's coming out of the Tower, on Saturday last (x), fetched forth by my Lord of Falkland, and without the usual degrees of confinement, at first to some one place (y); but absolute and free,

(x) January 6, 1624. Camdeni Annales Regis Jacobi I. p. 47.
(y) Camden, ubi supra, says, "that the Earl was ordered to " confine himself to the Lord Viscount Wallingford's house, or " neighbourhood."
Lord Chancellor BACON

so go where they please. I know not how peradventure this might occasion you to cast your thoughts, touching yourself, into some new mould, though not in the main, yet in something on the bye.

I beg leave to kiss your Lordship's hands.

Your Lordship's, in all humbleness,

for ever to honour and serve you,

T. MEAUTYS.

LODOWIC STUART, Duke of Lenox, to the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

My Lord,

It is not unknown to your Lordship, that, in respect I am now a married man, I have more reason than before to think of providing me some house in London, whereof I am yet destitute; and for that purpose, I have resolved to intreat your Lordship, that I may deal with you for York-house; wherein I will not offer any conditions to your loss. And, in respect I have understood, that the consideration of your Lady's wanting a house hath bred some difficulty in your Lordship to part with it, I will for that make offer unto your Lordship, and your Lady, to use the house in Canon-Row, late the Earl of Hertford's, being a very commodious and capable house, wherein I and my wife have absolute power; and whereof your Lordship shall have as long time, as you can challenge or desire of York-house. In this I do freer deal with your Lordship, in respect I know you are well assured of my well-wishes to you in general; and that in this particular, though I have not been without thoughts of this house before your Lordship had it; yet I was willing to give way to your Lordship's
ship's more pressing use thereof then. And as I do not
doubt of your Lordship's endeavour to gratify me in
this; so I shall esteem it as an extraordinary courtesy,
which I will study to requite by all means.
So, with my best wishes to your Lordship, I rest

Your Lordship's most loving friend,

LENOX.

In respect my Lord of Buckingham was once de-
sirous to have had this house, I would not deal for it
till now, that he is otherwise provided.

Whitehall, the 29th
of January, 1621.

To the Right Honourable my very good Lord, my Lord
Viscount St. Alban.

Answer of the Lord Viscount of St. Alban.

My very good Lord,

I AM sorry to deny your Grace any thing; but in
this you will pardon me. York-house is the house,
wherein my father died, and wherein I first breathed;
and there will I yield my last breath, if so please God,
and the King will give me leave; though I be now by
fortune (as the old proverb is) like a bear in a monk's
hood. At least no money, no value, shall make me
part with it. Besides, as I never denied it to my Lord
Marquis, so yet the difficulty I made was so like a de-
nial, as I owe unto my great love and respect to his
Lordship a denial to all my other friends; among
whom, in a very near place next his Lordship, I ever
accounted of your Grace. So, not doubting, that
you
you will continue me in your former love and good affection, I rest

Your Grace's, to do you humble service affectionate, &c.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

As my hopes, since my misfortunes, have proceeded of your Lordship's mere motion, without any petition of mine; so I leave the times and the ways to the same good mind of yours. True it is, a small matter for my debts would do me more good now, than double a twelvemonth hence. I have lost six thousand pounds by year, besides caps and courtesies. But now a very moderate proportion would suffice; for I still bear a little of the mind of a Commissioner of the Treasury, not to be overchargeable to his Majesty; and two things I may assure your Lordship of: the one, that I shall lead such a course of life, as whatsoever the King doth for me, shall rather fort to his Majesty's and your Lordship's honour, than to envy: the other, that whatsoever men talk, I can play the good husband, and the King's bounty shall not be lost. If your Lordship think good, the Prince should come in to help, I know his Highness witheth me well; if you will let me know when, and how, he may be used. But the King is the fountain, who, I know, is good.

God prosper you.

Your Lordship's most bounden and faithful,

Gorhambury, January 30, 1621. 

Fr. St. Alban.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

Your Lordship dealeth honourably with me in giving me notice, that your Lordship is provided of an house, whereby you discontinue the treaty your Lordship had with me for York-house, although I shall make no use of this notice, as to deal with any other. For I was ever resolved your Lordship should have had it, or no man. But your Lordship doth yet more nobly, in assuring me, you never meant it with any the least inconvenience to myself. May it please your Lordship likewise to be assured from me, that I ever desired you should have it, and do still continue of the same mind.

I humbly pray your Lordship, to move his Majesty to take consideration of my long imprisonment. When I was in the Tower, I was nearer help of physic; I could partly with my creditors; I could deal with friends about my business; I could have helps at hand for my writings and studies, wherein I spend my time; all which here fail me. Good my Lord, deliver me out of this; me, who am his Majesty's devout beadman, and

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful serv vant,

Gorhambury, this 3d of Feb. 1621.

Fr. St. Aeban.

(z) Mr. Chamberlain, in a MS. letter to Sir Dudley Carleton, dated at London, January 19, 1621, mentions, that the Marquis of Buckingham had contracted with the Lord and Lady Wallingford, for their house near Whitehall, for some money.
My most honourable Lord,

At your last going to Gorhambury, you were pleased to have speech with me about some passages of parliament; touching which, I conceived, by your Lordship, that I should have had farther direction by a gentleman, to whom you committed some care and consideration of your Lordship's intentions therein. I can only give this account of it, that never was any man more willing or ready to do your Lordship service, than myself; and in that you then spake of, I had been most forward to have done whatsoever I had been, by farther direction, used in. But I understood, that your Lordship's pleasure that way was changed. Since, my Lord, I was advised with, touching the judgements given in the late parliament. For them (if it please your Lordship to hear my weak judgement expressed freely to you) I conceive thus. First, that admitting it were no session, but only a convention, as the proclamation calls it; yet the judgements given in the Upper House (if no other reason be against them) are good; for they are given by the Lords, or the Upper House, by virtue of that ordinary authority, which they have as the supreme court of judicature; which is easily to be conceived, without any relation to the matter of session, which consists only in the passing of acts, or not passing them, with the royal assent. And though no session of the three estates together be without such acts so passed; yet every part of the parliament severally did its own acts legally enough to continue, as the acts of other courts of justice are done. And why should any doubts be, but that a judgement out of the King's Bench, or Exchequer-Chamber, reversed there, had
had been good, although no session? For there was truly a Parliament, truly an Upper House (which exercised by itself this power of judicature) although no session. Yet withall, my Lord, I doubt, it will fall out, upon fuller consideration, to be thought a session also. Were it not for the proclamation, I should be clearly of that mind; neither doth the clause, in the act of subsidy, hinder it. For that only prevented the determination of the session at that instant; but did not prevent the being of a session, whenever the parliament should be dissolved. But because that point was resolved in the proclamation, and also in the commission of dissolution on the 8th of February, I will rest satisfied.

But there are also examples of former times, that may direct us in that point of the judgement, in regard there is store of judgements of parliament, especially under Edward I. and Edward II. in such conventions, as never had, for aught appears, any act passed in them.

Next, my Lord, I conceive thus; that by reason there is no record of those judgements; it may be justly thought, that they are of no force. For thus it stands. The Lower House exhibited the declarations in paper; and the Lords, receiving them, proceeded to judgement verbally; and the notes of their judgements are taken by the clerk, in the journal only; which, as I think, is no record of itself; neither was it ever used as one. Now the record, that in former times was of the judgements and proceedings there, was in this form. The accusation was exhibited in parchment; and being so received, and indorsed, was the first record; and that remained filed among the bills of parliament, it being of itself as the bills in the King's Bench. Then out of this there was a formal judgement, with the accusation entered into that roll, or second record, which the clerk transcribes by ancient use, and sends into the Chancery.
But in this case there are none of these: neither doth any thing seem to help to make a record of it, than only this, that the clerk may enter it, now after the parliament; which, I doubt, he cannot. Because, although in other courts the clerks enter all, and make their records after the term; yet in this parliamentary proceeding it falls out, that the court being dissolved, the clerk cannot be said to have such a relation to the parliament, which is not then at all in being, as the prothonotaries of the courts in Westminster have to their courts, which stand only adjourned. Besides, there cannot be an example found, by which it may appear, that ever any record of the first kind (where the transcript is into the Chancery) was made in parliament; but only sitting the House, and in their view. But this I offer to your Lordship's farther consideration, desiring your favourable censure of my fancy herein; which, with whatsoever ability I may pretend to, shall ever be desirous to serve you, to whom I shall perpetually own myself.

Your Lordship's most humble servant,

From the Temple,
February xiv.

J. Selden.

My Lord,

If your Lordship have done with that Mascardus de Interpretatione Statutorum (a), I shall be glad, that you would give order, that I might use it. And for that of 12 Hen. 7, touching the grand council in the manuscript, I have since seen a privy seal of the time of Henry 7. (without a year) directed to borrow for the King; and in it there is a recital of a grand coun-

(a) Alderani Mascardi communes conclusiones utriusque juris ad generalem statutorum interpretationem accommodatae; printed at Ferrara, in 1608.
LETTERS,

Cecil, which thought, that such a sum was fit to be levied; whereof the Lords gave 40,000l. and the rest was to be gotten by privy seal upon loan. Doubtless, my Lord, this interprets that of the manuscript story.

On the back of this letter are the following notes by the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

"The case of the judgement in parliament, upon a writ of error put by Just. Hu. (b)."

"The case of no judgement entered in the Court of Augmentations, or Survey of first Fruits; which are dissolved, where there may be an entry after, out of a paper-book.

"Mem. All the acts of my proceeding were after the royal assent to the subsidy."

To Mr. Tobie Matthew (c).

Good Mr. Matthew,

In this solitude of friends, which is the base court (d) of adversity, where almost no body will be seen stirring, I have often remembered a saying of my Lord Ambassador of Spain (e), Amor sin fin no tiene fin (f). This moveth me to make choice of his excellent Lordship for his noble succours towards not the aspiring, but the respiring of my fortunes.

I, that am a man of books, have observed his Lordship to have the magnanimity of his own nation,

(b) Hutton.

(e) This, and the following letter of March 5, 1611, to the Marquis of Buckingham, are inserted from the originals, much more complete and exact, than the copies of them printed in his works.

(d) base cour.

(f) Love without ends hath no end.
and the cordiality of ours; and, by this time, I think
he hath the wit of both. Sure I am, that for myself
I have found him, in both my fortunes, to esteem
me so much above value, and to love me so much
above possibility of deserving, or obliging, on my
part, as if he were a friend reserved for such a time as
this. I have known his Lordship likewise (while I
stood in a stand where I might look about) a most
faithful and respective friend to my Lord Marquis;
who, next the King and the Prince, was my raiser,
and must be (he or none,) I do not say my restorer,
but my reliever.

I have, as I made you acquainted at your being
with me, a purpose to present my Lord Marquis
with an offer of my house and lands here at Gorham-
bury; a thing, which, as it is the best means I have
now left to demonstrate my affection to his Lordship,
so I hope it will be acceptable to him. This proposi-
tion I desire to put into no other hand but my Lord
Ambassador's, as judging his hand to be the safest,
the most honourable, and the most effectual for my
good, if my Lord will be pleased to deal in it. And
when I had thus resolved, I never sought, nor
thought of any mean but yourself, being so private,
faithful, and discreet a friend to us both. I desire you
therefore, good Mr. Matthew, to acquaint my Lord
Ambassador with this overture; and both to use your-
self, and desire at his Lordship's hands secrecy there-
in; and withall to let his Lordship know, that in
this business, whatsoever in particular you shall treat
with him, I shall not fail, in all points, to make
good and perform.

Commend my humble service to his Lordship. I
ever rest

Your most affectionate and assured friend,

Gorhambury, Feb.
28, 1621.       FR. ST. ALBAN.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

THOUGH I have returned answer to your Lordship's last letter by the same way, by which I received it; yet I humbly pray your Lordship to give me leave to add these few lines.

My Lord, as God above is witness, that I ever have loved and honoured your Lordship, as much, I think, as any son of Adam can love or honour any subject, and continue in as hearty and strong wishes of felicity to be heaped and fixed upon you, as ever; so, as low as I am, I had rather sojourn in a college in Cambridge, than recover a good fortune by any other but yourself. Marry, to recover yourself to me, if I have you not, or to ease your Lordship in anything, wherein your Lordship would not so fully appear, or to be made participant of your favours in your own way, I would use any man, that were your Lordship's friend: and therefore, good my Lord, in that let me not be mistaken. Secondly, if in any of my former letters I have given your Lordship any disfaste by the style of them, or any particular passages, I humbly pray your Lordship's benign construction and pardon. For, I confess, it is my fault, though it be some happiness to me withall, that I do most times forget my adversity. But I shall never forget to be

Your Lordship's most obliged friend,

and faithful servant,

March 5, 1621.

Fr. St. Alban.

Fragments
My meaning was, if my Lord should obtain for me, by his noble mediation, in consideration of my services past, and other respects, to do that, for my relief, which I was suitor for by my Lord's noble mediation, and whereof I was in good hope, to have presented my Lord with Gorhambury in possession, out of gratitude and love, for nothing.

My meaning was, if my Lord should prevail for me in my suit to the King for reward of services, and relief of my poor estate, to have presented him with Gorhambury, out of gratitude and love, for nothing, except some satisfaction to my wife, for her interest.

If my Lord like better to proceed by way of bargain, so I find that I may but sublift, I will deserve of his honour, and express my love in a friendly pennyworth.

The third point to be added:

This as his work.] The more for kissing the King's hands presently.

The reasons, stalling my debts.
Willingness in my friends to help me.
None will be so bold as to oppress me.

The pretence, that the King would give me direction, in what nature of writings to expend my time.

The letter to expect yet, and the manner of the delivery.

That my Lord do not impute it, if he hear I deal with others; for he shall better perceive the value, and I shall make it good to his Lordship, being my state requireth speed.
May it please your Lordship,

REMEMBRING, that the letter your Lordship put yesterday into my hand was locked up under two or three seals, it ran in my head, that it might be business of importance, and require haste: and not finding Mr. Matthew in town, nor any certainty of his return till Monday or Tuesday, I thought it became me to let your Lordship know it, that I might receive your Lordship's pleasure (if need were) to lend it by as safe a hand, as if it had three seals more.

My Lord, I saw Sir Arthur Ingram, who let fall somewhat, as if he could have been contented to have received a letter by me from your Lordship, with something in it like an acknowledgement to my Lord Treasurer (g), that by his means you had received a kind letter from my Lord Marquis. But, in the close, he came about, and fell rather to excuse what was left out of the letter, than to please himself much with what was within it. Only indeed he looked upon me, as if he did a little distrust my good meaning in it. But that is all one to me; for I have been used to it, of late, from others, as well as from him. But persons apt to be suspicious may well be borne with; for certainly they trouble themselves most, and lose most by it. For of such it is a hard question, whether those be fewest, whom they trust, or those, who trust them. But for him, and some others, I will end in a wish, that, as to your Lordship's service, they might prove but half so much honester, as they think themselves wiser, than other men.

(g) Lionel, Lord Cranfield, made Lord Treasurer in October, 1621.
It is doubtful, whether the King will come to morrow, or not; for they say he is full of pain in his feet.

My Lord Marquis came late to town last night, and goeth back this evening: and Sir Edward Sackville watcheth an opportunity to speak with him before he go. However, he wisheth, that your Lordship would lose no time in returning an answer, made all of sweet-meats, to my Lord Marquis's letter, which, he is confident, will be both tasted and digested by him. And Sir Edward wisheth, that the other letter to my Lord Marquis, for presenting your discourse of laws to his Majesty, might follow the first. I humbly reft

Your Lordship's for ever truly

to honour and serve you,

Martii 3, 1621.

THO. MEAUTYS.

To the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

May it please your Lordship,

I had not failed to appear this night, upon your Lordship's summons, but that my stay till to morrow, I knew, would mend my welcome, by bringing Mr. Matthew, who means to dine with your Lordship only, and so to rebound back to London, by reason my Lord Digby's journey calls for him on the sudden. Neither yet was this all, that stayed me; for I hear somewhat, that I like reasonably well; and yet I hope it will mend too; which is, that my Lord Marquis hath sent you a message by my Lord of Falkland (which is a far better hand than my Lord Treasurer's,) that gives you leave to come presently to Highgate: and Sir Edward Sackville, speaking for
the other five miles, my Lord commended his care and zeal for your Lordship, but silenced him thus: "Let my Lord be ruled by me: it will be never "the worse for him." But my Lord Marquis saying farther to him, "Sir Edward, however you play "a good friend's part for my Lord St. Alban; yet "I must tell you, I have not been well used by him." And Sir Edward desiring of him to open himself in whatsoever he might take offence at; and withall, taking upon him to have known so much, from time to time, of your Lordship's heart, and endeavours towards his Lordship, as that he doubted not but he was able to clear any mist, that had been cast before his Lordship's eyes by your enemies; my Lord Marquis, by this time being ready to go to the Spanish Ambassador's to dinner, broke off with Sir Edward, and told him, that after dinner he would be back at Wallingsford-house, and then he would tell Sir Edward more of his mind; with whom I have had newly conference at large, and traced out to him, as he desired me, some particulars of that, which they call a treaty with my Lord Treasurer about York-house, which Sir Edward Sackville knows how to put together, and make a smooth tale of it for your Lordship; and this night I shall know all from him, and to-morrow, by dinner, I shall not fail to attend your Lordship: till when, and ever, I rest

Your Lordship's in all truth

to honour and serve you,

T. MEAUTYS.

Indorsed, Received March 11.
To Henry Cary, Lord Viscount Falkland (b).

My very good Lord,

Your Lordship's letter was the best letter I received this good while, except the last kind letter from my Lord of Buckingham, which this confirmeth. It is the best accident, one of them, amongst men, when they hap to be obliged to those, whom naturally and personally they love, as I ever did your Lordship; in troth not many between my Lord Marquis and yourself; so that the sparks of my affection shall ever rest quick, under the ashes of my fortune, to do you service; and wishing to your fortune and family all good.

Your Lordship's most affectionate,

and much obliged, &c.

I pray your Lordship to present my humble service and thanks to my Lord Marquis, to whom, when I have a little paused, I purpose to write; as likewise to his Majesty, for whose health and happiness, as his true beadman, I most frequently pray.

Indorsed,

March 11. Copy of my answer to Lord Falkland.

(b) appointed Lord Deputy of Ireland, September 8, 1622.
To the Lord Treasurer (i).

My very good Lord,

I HAVE received, by my noble friend, my Lord Viscount Falkland, advertisement, as from my Lord Marquis, of three things; the one, that upon his Lordship’s motion to his Majesty, he is graciously pleased to grant some degree of release of my confinement. The second, that if I shall gratify your Lordship, who, my Lord understandeth, are desirous to treat with me about my house at London, with the same, his Lordship will take it as well, as if it was done to himself. The third, that his Majesty hath referred unto your Lordship the consideration of the relief of my poor estate. I have it also from other part, yet by such, as have taken it immediately from my Lord Marquis, that your Lordship hath done me to the King very good offices. My Lord, I am much bounden to you: wherefore if you shall be pleased to send Sir Arthur Ingram, who formerly moved me in it for your Lordship, to treat farther with me, I shall let your Lordship see how affectionately I am desirous to please your Lordship after my Lord of Buckingham.

So willing your Lordship’s weighty affairs, for his Majesty’s service, a happy return to his Majesty’s contentment, and your honour, I rest

Your Lordship’s very affectionate
to do you service,

Fr. St. Alban.

Indorsed,

March 12. To the Lord Treasurer.

(i) Lionel, Lord Cranfield.
To the Lord Treasurer.

My very good Lord,

The honourable correspondence, which your Lordship hath been pleased to hold with my noble and constant friend, my Lord Marquis, in furthering his Majesty's grace towards me, as well concerning my liberty, as the consideration of my poor estate, hath very much obliged me to your Lordship, the more by how much the less likelihood there is, that I shall be able to merit it at your Lordship's hands. Yet thus much I am glad of, that this course, your Lordship holds with me, doth carry this much upon itself, that the world shall see in this, amongst other things, that you have a great and noble heart.

For the particular business of York-house, Sir Arthur Ingram can bear me witness, that I was ready to leave the conditions to your Lordship's own making: but since he tells me plainly, that your Lordship will by no means have to be so, you will give me leave to refer it to Sir Arthur Ingram, who is so much your Lordship's servant, and no less faithful friend to me, and understands values well, to set a price between us.

For the reference his Majesty hath been graciously pleased, at my Lord Marquis's suit, to make unto your Lordship, touching the relief of my poor estate (k), which my Lord of Falkland's letter hath signified, warranting me likewise to address myself to your Lordship touching the same; I humbly pray your Lordship to give it dispatch, my age, health,
and fortunes, making time to me therein precious. Wherefore, if your Lordship (who knowest best what the King may best do) have thought of any particular, I would desire to know from your good Lordship: otherwise I have fallen myself upon a particular, which I have related to Sir Arthur, and, I hope, will seem modest, for my help to live and subsist. As for somewhat towards the paying off my debts, which are now my chief care, and without charge of the King's coffers, I will not now trouble your Lordship; but purposing to be at Chiswick, where I have taken a house, within this sevennight, I hope to wait upon your Lordship, and to gather some violets in your garden, and will then impart unto you, if I have thought of any thing of that nature for my good.

So I ever rest &c.

THOMAS MEAUTYS, Esq, to the Lord Viscount
ST. ALBAN.

May it please your Lordship,

I HAVE been attending upon my Lord Marquis's minutes for the signing of the warrant. This day he purposed in earnest to have done it; but it falls out untowardly, for the warrant was drawn, as your Lordship remembers, in haste at Gorhambury, and in as much haste delivered to Sir Edward Sackville, as soon as I alighted from my horse, who instantly put it into my Lord Marquis's hands, so that no copy could possibly be taken of it by me. Now his Lordship hath searched much for it, and is yet at a loss, which I knew not till this evening: and because your Lordship drew it with caution, I dare not venture it upon my memory to carry level what your Lordship wrote, and therefore dispatched away this messenger, that to your Lordship, by a fresh post,
(for this will hardly do it) may send a warrant to your mind, ready drawn, to be here to-morrow by seven a clock, as Sir Arthur (l) tells me my Lord Marquis hath directed: for the King goes early to Hampton-Court, and will be here on Saturday.

Your books (m) are ready, and passing well bound up. If your Lordship's letters to the King, Prince, and my Lord Marquis were ready, I think it were good to lose no time in their delivery; for the printer's fingers itch to be selling.

My Lady hath seen the house at Chiswick, and may make a shift to like it: only she means to come to your Lordship thither, and not to go first: and therefore your Lordship may please to make the more haste, for the great Lords long to be in York-house.

Mr. Johnson will be with your Lordship to-morrow; and then I shall write the rest.

Your Lordship's in all humbleness
and honour to serve you.

To Thomas Meautys, Esq.

Good Mr. Meautys,

For the difference of the warrant, it is not material at the first. But I may not stir till I have it; and therefore I expect it to-morrow.

For my Lord of London's (n) stay, there may be an error in my book (o); but I am sure there is none in me, since the King had it three months by him, and allowed it: if there be any thing to be mended, it is better to be espied now than hereafter.

(l) Ingram.  
(m) History of the Reign of King Henry VII.  
(n) Dr. George Mountain.  
(o) His History of the Reign of King Henry VII.
LETTERS, &c. of

I send you the copies of the three letters, which you have; and, in mine own opinion, this demur, as you term it, in my Lord of London, maketh it more necessary than before, that they were delivered, specially in regard they contain withall my thanks. It may be signified they were sent before I knew of any stay; and being but in those three hands, they are private enough. But this I leave merely at your discretion, restting

Your most affectionate and assured friend,
March 21, 1621.

FR. ST. ALBAN.

To Mr. Tobias Matthew.

Good Mr. Matthew,

I DO make account, God willing, to be at Chislewick on Saturday; or, because this weather is terrible to one, that hath kept much in, Monday.

In my letter of thanks to my Lord Marquis, which is not yet delivered, but to be forthwith delivered, I have not forgotten to mention, that I have received signification of his noble favour and affection, amongst other ways, from yourself, by name. If, upon your repair to the court (whereof I am right glad,) you have any speech with the Marquis of me, I pray place the alphabet (as you can do it right well) in a frame, to express my love faithful and ardent towards him. And for York-house, that whether in a strait line, or a compass line, I meant it his Lordship in the way, which I thought might please him best. I ever rest

Your most affectionate and assured friend,
March 21, 1621.

FR. ST. ALBAN.

Though
Though your journey to court be before your receipt of this letter, yet it may serve for another time.

To the Queen of Bohemia.

It may please your Majesty,

I find in books (and books I dare alledge to your Majesty, in regard of your singular ability to read and judge of them even above your sex) that it is accounted a great bliss for a man to have leisure with honour. That was never my fortune, nor is. For time was, I had honour without leisure; and now I have leisure without honour. And I cannot say so neither altogether, considering there remain with me the marks and stamp of the King's, your father's, grace, though I go not for so much in value, as I have done. But my desire is now to have leisure without loitering, and not to become an abbey-lubber, as the old proverb was, but to yield some fruit of my private life. Having therefore written the reign of your Majesty's famous ancestor, King Henry the Seventh; and it having passed the file of his Majesty's judgement, and been graciously also accepted of the Prince, your brother, to whom it is dedicated, I could not forget my duty so far to your excellent Majesty (to whom, for that I know and have heard, I have been at all times so much bound, as you are ever present with me, both in affection and admiration) as not to make unto you, in all humbleness, a present thereof, as now being not able to give you tribute of any service. If King Henry the Seventh were alive again, I hope verily he could not be so angry with me for not flattering him, as well-pleased in seeing himself so truly described in colours, that will last, and be believed. I most humbly pray your Majesty graciously to accept of my good will; and so, with all reverence,
reverence, kiss your hands, praying to God above, by his divine and most benign providence, to conduct your affairs to happy issue; and resting

Your Majesty's most humble
and devoted servant,

April 20, 1622.

Fr. St. Alban.

Sir Edward Sackville to the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

My very honoured Lord,

LONGING to yield an account of my stewardship, and that I had not buried your talent in the ground, I waited yesterday the Marquis's pleasure, untill I found a fit opportunity to importune some return of his Lordship's resolution. The morning could not afford it; for time only allowed leave to tell him, I would say something. In the afternoon I had amends for all. In the forenoon he laid the law, but in the afternoon he preached the gospel; when, after some revivations of the old distaste concerning York-house, he most nobly opened his heart unto me, wherein I read that, which argued much good towards you. After which revelation, the book was again sealed up, and must, in his own time, only by himself be again manifested unto you. I have leave to remember some of the vision, and am not forbidden to write it. He vowed, not court-like, but constantly, to appear your friend so much, as if his Majesty should abandon the care of you, you should share his fortune with him. He pleased to tell me, how much he had been beholden to you; how well he loved you; how unluckily he took the denial of your house (for so he will needs understand it.) But the close, for all this, was
was harmonious, since he protested he would seriously
begin to study your ends, now that the world should
see he had no ends on you. He is in hand with the
work, and therefore will, by no means, accept of
your offer; though, I can assure you, the tender hath
much won upon him, and mellowed his heart to-
wards you; and your genius directed you right,
when you wrote that letter of denial unto the
Duke (p). The King saw it; and all the rest;
which made him say unto the Marquis, you played
an after-game well; and that now he had no reason
to be much offended.

I have already talked of the revelation, and now
am to speak in apocalyptic language, which I hope
you will rightly comment; whereof, if you make
difficulty, the bearer (q) can help you with the key
of the cypher.

My Lord Falkland, by this time, hath shewed you
London from Highgate. If York-houfe were gone,
the town were your's; and all your straitest shackles
cleared off, besides more comfort than the city-air
only. The Marquis would be exceedingly glad the
Treasurer had it. This I know; but this you must
not know from me. Bargain with him presently,
upon as good conditions as you can procure, so you
have direct motion from the Marquis to let him
have it. Seem not to dive into the secret of it;
though you are purblind, if you see not through it.
I have told Mr. Meautys, how I would wish your
Lordship to make an end of it. From him, I be-
seech you, take it, and from me only the advice to
perform it. If you part not speedily with it, you
may defer the good, which is approaching near you,
and disappointing other aims (which must either
shortly receive content, or never,) perhaps anew
yield matter of discontent, though you may be indeed

(p) of Lenox, of the 30th of January, 1621.
(q) Probably Mr. Meautys.
as innocent as before. Make the Treasurer believe, that since the Marquis will by no means accept of it, and that you must part with it, you are more willing to please him, than any body else, because you are given to understand my Lord Marquis so inclines; which inclination, if the Treasurer shortly send unto you about it, desire may be more clearly manifested, than as yet it hath been; since, as I remember, none hitherto hath told you in terminis terminantibus, that the Marquis desires you should gratify the Treasurer. I know that way the hare runs; and that my Lord Marquis longs until Cranfield hath it; and so I wish too, for your good, yet would not it were absolutely passed, until my Lord Marquis did send, or write, unto you, to let him have it; for then, his disposing of it were but the next degree removed from the immediate acceptance of it, and your Lordship freed from doing it otherwise than to please him, and to comply with his own will and way.

I have no more to say, but that I am, and ever will be

Your Lordship's most affectionate friend,

and humble servant,

E. SACKVILLE.

Indorsed, Received the 11th of May, 1622.

To the Lord Keeper, Dr. WILLIAMS, Bishop of Lincoln.

My very good Lord,

I UNDERSTAND, there is an extent prayed against me, and a surety of mine, by the executors of one Harrys, a goldsmith. The statute is twelve
twelve years old, and falleth to an executor, or an executor of an executor, I know not whether. And it was sure a statute collected out of a shop-debt, and much of it paid. I humbly pray your Lordship, according to justice and equity, to stay the extent, being likewise upon a double penalty, till I may better inform myself touching a matter so long past; and, if it be requisite, put in a bill, that the truth of the account appearing, such satisfaction may be made, as shall be fit. So I rest

Your Lordship's affectionate to do you faithful service,

May 30, 1622.

FR. ST. ALBAN.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM (w).

My very good Lord,

I THOUGHT it appertained to my duty, both as a subject, and as he, that took once the oath of a Counsellor, to make known to your Lordship an advertisement, which came to me this morning. A gentleman, a dear friend of mine, whom your Lordship cannot but imagine, though I name him not, told me thus much, that some English priests, that negotiated at Rome to facilitate the dispensation, did their own business (that was his phrase;) for they negotiated with the Pope to erect some titular bishops for England, that might ordain, and have other spiritual faculties; saying with all most honestly, that he thought himself bound to impart this to some Counsellor, both as a loyal subject, and as a Catholic; for that he doubted it might be a cause to cross the graces and mercies, which the Catholics now enjoy, if it be not prevented: and he asked my advice, whether
whether he should make it known to your Lordship, or to my Lord Keeper (r), when he came back to London. I commended his loyalty and discretion, and wished him to address himself to your Lordship, who might communicate it with my Lord Keeper, if you saw cause, and that he repaired to your Lordship presently, which he resolved to do. Nevertheless, I did not think mine own particular duty acquitted, except I certified it also myself, borrowing so much of private friendship in a cause of state, as not to tell him I would do so much.

Indorsed,

My letter to my Lord Marquis, touching the business of estate advertised by Mr. Matthew (s).

To the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

My most honoured Lord,

Come in these to your Lordship with the voice of thanksgiving, for the continuance of your accustomed noble care of me and my good, which overtakes me, I find, whithersoever I go. But for the present itself (whereof your Lordship writes,) whether or no it be better than that I was wont to bring your

(r) Dr. Williams, Bishop of Lincoln.
(s) The date of this letter may be pretty nearly determined by one of the Lord Keeper to the Marquis of Buckingham, dated August 23, 1622, and printed in the Cabala. The postscript to that letter is as follows: "The Spanish Ambassador took the alarm very speedily of the titular Roman Bishop; and before my departure from his house at Ilfington, whither I went privately to him, did write both to Rome and Spain to prevent it. But I am afraid, that Tobie will prove but an apocryphal, and no canonical, intelligencer, acquainting the state with this project for the Jesuits, rather than for Jesus's fake."

Lordship,
Lord, the end only can prove. For I have yet no more to shew for it, than good words, of which many times I brought your Lordship good store. But because modicetideans were not made to thrive in court, I mean to lose no time from affailing my Lord Marquis, for which purpose I am now hovering about New-hall (t), where his Lordship is expected (but not the King) this day, or to-morrow: which place, as your Lordship adviseth, may not be ill chosen for my business. For, if his Lordship be not very thick of hearing, sure, New-hall will be heard to speak for me.

And now, my good Lord, if any thing make me dissident, or indeed almost indifferent, how it succeeds, it is this; that my sole ambition having ever been, and still is, to grow up only under your Lordship, it is become preposterous, even to my nature and habit, to think of prospering, or receiving any growth, either without, or besides your Lordship. And therefore let me claim of your Lordship to do me this right, as to believe that, which my heart says, or rather swears, to me, namely, that what addition sooner, by God's good providence, comes at any time to my life or fortune, it is, in my account, but to enable me the more to serve your Lordship in both; at whose feet I shall ever humbly lay down all, that I have, or am, never to rise thence other than

Your Lordship's in all duty

and reverent affections,

September 11, 1622.

   T. MEAVTYS.

(t) In Essex.
To the Countess of Buckingham (u), mother to the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very honourable good Lady,

Your Ladyship's late favour and noble usage towards me were such, as I think your absence a great part of my misfortunes. And the more I find my most noble Lord, your son, to increase in favour towards me, the more, out of my love to him, I wish he had often by him so loving and wise a mother. For, if my Lord were never so wise, as wise as Solomon; yet, I find, that Solomon himself, in the end of his Proverbs, sets down a whole chapter of advices, that his mother taught him.

Madam, I can but receive your remembrance with affection, and use your name with honour, and intend you my best service, if I be able, ever resting

Your Ladyship's humble

and affectionate servant,

Bedford-house, this 29th of October, 1622.

Fr. St. Alban.

(u) Mary, daughter of Anthony Beaumont, a younger son of William Beaumont of Cole-Orton in Leicestershire. She was thrice married: 1. to Sir George Villiers, father of the Duke of Buckingham; 2. to Sir William Rayner; and 3. to Sir Thomas Compton, Knight of the Bath, a younger brother of William, Earl of Northampton. She was created Countess of Buckingham, July 1, 1618; and died April 19, 1632.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I HAVE many things to thank your Lordship for, since I had the happiness to see you; that your Lordship, before your going out of town, sent my memorial to my Lord Treasurer: that your Lordship offered, and received, and presented my petition to the King, and procured me a reference: that your Lordship moved his Majesty, and obtained for me access to him, against his Majesty comes next, which, in mine own opinion, is better than if it had been now, and will be a great comfort to me, though I should die next day after: that your Lordship gave me so good English for my Latin book. My humble request is, at this time, that because my Lord Treasurer keepeth yet his answer in suspense (though by one, he useth to me, he speaketh me fair,) that your Lordship would nick it with a word: for if he do me good, I doubt it may not be altogether of his own. God ever prosper you.

Your Lordship's most bounden and faithful servant,

4th of November, 1622.

Fr. St. Albam.

Memorial of Access (w).

It may please your Majesty,

I MAY now in a manner sing, nunc dimittis, now I have seen you. Before methought I was scant

(w) This paper was written in Greek characters, soon after his access to King James I, which had been promised him in a letter of the Marquis of Buckingham, from Newmarket, November 13, 1622.
in state of grace, but in a kind of utter darkness. And therefore, among other your mercies and favours, I do principally thank your Majesty for this admission of me to kiss your hands.

I may not forget also to thank your Majesty for your remission of my fine, for granting of my *quietus*, and general pardon; and your late recommendation of my debts; favours not small, specially to a servant out of fight, and out of life.

I beseech your Majesty to give me leave to tell you what had, in my misfortunes, sustained me. Aristotle says, *old men live by remembrance, young men by hope*. And so it is true, that young men live by hope, and fallen men by remembrance. Two remembrances have sustained me: the one, that since I had the prime vote in the Lower House, to be first Commissioner for the union, untill the last assembly of parliament, I was chosen Messenger of both Houses, in the petitions of religion (which were my two first, and last services,) having past a number of services of importance, your Majesty never chid me; neither did ever any public service miscarry in my hands. This was the finishting act of my prosperity. The second was of my adversity, which, in few words, is this, that as my fault was not against your Majesty; so my fall was not your act; and therefore I hope I shall live and die in your favour.

I have this farther to say in the nature of an humble oblation; for things once dedicated and vowed cannot lose their character, nor be made common. I ever vowed myself to your service. Therefore,

Firstly, if your Majesty do at any time think it fit, for your affairs, to employ me again publicly upon the stage, I shall so live and spend my time, as neither discontinuance shall disable me, nor adversity shall discourage me, nor any thing, that I shall do, give any scandal or envy upon me.

Secondly,
Secondly, if your Majesty shall not hold that fit; yet, if it shall please you at any time to ask my opinion, or require my propositions privately by my Lord Marquis, or any of your Counsellors, that is my friend, touching any commission or business; for, as Ovid said, Est aliquid luce patente minus; I shall be glad to be a labourer, or pioneer in your service.

Lastly, and chiefly, because your Majesty is an universal scholar, or rather master, and my pen (as I may * it, passed **) gained upon the world, your Majesty would appoint me some task, or literary province, that I may serve you calamo, if not confilo.

I know, that I am cenfured of some conceit of mine ability, or worth: but, I pray your Majesty, impute it to desire (possunt quia posse videntur.) And again, I should do some wrong to your Majesty's school, if, in sixteen years access and near service, I should think I had learned, or laid in, nothing.

May it please your Majesty, I have borne your image in metal; and I shall keep it in my heart, while I live.

That his Majesty's business never miscarried in my hands, I do not impute to any extraordinary ability in myself; but to my freedom from particular, either friends, or ends, and my careful receit of his Majesty's directions, being, as I have formerly said to him, but as a bucket and cistern to that fountain; a bucket to draw forth, a cistern to preserve.

I may allude to the three petitions of the Litany, Libera nos, Domine; parce mihi, Domine; et exaudi nos, Domine. First, the first, I am persuaded, his Majesty had a mind to do it, and could not conveniently, in respect of his affairs. For the second, he had done it in my fine and pardon. For the third, I had likewise performed, in restoring to the light of his countenance.

There be mountebanks, as well in the civil body, as in the natural. I ever served his Majesty with modesty; no shouldering, no undertaking.

Y 2 Seneca
Seneca faith Tam otii debet constare ratio quam negotii. So I make his Majesty oblation of both.

For envy, it is an almanack of the last year; and, as a friend of mine said, the parliament died penitent towards me.

Of my offences, far be it from me to say, dat venian corvis; vexat censora Columbas: But I will say that I have good warrant for; they were not the greatest offenders in Israel, upon whom the wall of Shilo fell.

What the King bestowed upon me, will be farther seen, than upon Paul's steeple.

My story is proud. I may thank your Majesty; for I heard him note of Tasso, that he could know which poem he made, when he was in good condition, and which when he was a beggar. I doubt he could make no such observation of me.

My Lord hath done many things to shew his greatness. This of mine is one of them, that shews his goodness.

I am like ground fresh. If I be left to myself, I will grow, and bear natural philosophy: but if the King will plow me up again, and sow me on, I hope to give him some yield.

Kings do raise and pull down with reason; but the greatest work is reasoning.

For my hap, I seek an otium, and, if it may be, a fat otium.

I am said to have a feather in my head. I pray God some are not wild in their head, that gird not well.

I am too old, and the seas are too long, for me to double the Cape of Good Hope.

Ashes are good for somewhat; for lees, for salts. But I hope I am rather embers than ashes, having the heat of good affections, under the ashes of my fortunes.

Your Majesty hath power: I have faith. Therefore a miracle may be soon wrought.

I would
Lord Chancellor Bacon.

I would live to study, and not study to live; yet I am prepared for date obolum Bellifario; and I that have borne a bag, can bear a wallet.

For my Pen:

If active, 1. The reconciling of laws.
2. The disposing of wards, and generally education of youth.
3. Limiting the jurisdiction of courts, and prescribing rules for every of them.

Reglement of Trade.

If contemplative, 1. Going on with the story of Henry the Eighth.
2. General treatise of de Legibus et Jusitiâ.
3. The Holy War.

For my Lord of Buckingham.

These I rank high amongst his favours.
To the King of * * * * that the goodness of his nature may strive with the goodness of his fortune.
He had but one fault, and that is, that you cannot mar him with any accumulating of honours upon him.
Now after this sun-shine, and little dew, that save war.
Whales will overturn your boat, or bark, or of Admiral, or other.

For the Prince.

Ever my chief patron.
The work of the father is creation; of the son redemption.
You would have drawn me out of the fire; now out of the mire.
To ask leave of the King to kiss the Prince's hands, if he be not now present.

Indorsed, Mem. of access.

To the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

My most honoured Lord,

SINCE my last to your Lordship, I find, by Mr. Johnson, that my Lord Treasurer is not twice in one mind, or Sir Arthur Ingram not twice in one tale. For Sir Arthur, contrary to his speech but yesterday with me, puts himself now, as it seems, in new hopes to prevail with my Lord Treasurer for your Lordship's good and advantage, by a proposition, sent by Mr. Johnson, for the altering of your patent to a new mould, more safe than the other, which he seemed to dissuade, as I wrote to your Lordship. I like my Lord Treasurer's heart to your Lordship, so much every day worse than other, especially for his coarse usage of your Lordship's name in his last speech, as that I cannot imagine he means you any good. And therefore, good my Lord, what directions you shall give herein to Sir Arthur Ingram, let them be as safe ones, as you can think upon; and that your Lordship surrender not your old patent, till you have the new under seal, left my Lord Keeper should take toy, and stop it there. And I know your Lordship cannot forget they have such a savage word among them, as fleeing. God in heaven bless your Lordship from such hands and tongues; and then things will mend of themselves.

Your Lordship's, in all humbleness,

to honour and serve you,

This Sunday morning.

T. Mears. y.s.

Indorsed, 25th of November [1622].
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I FIND my Lord Treasurer, after so many days, and appointments, and such certain messages and promises, doth but mean to coax me (it is his own word of old) and to saw me asunder, and to do just nothing upon his Majesty's gracious reference, nobly procured by your Lordship for this poor remnant. My Lord, let it be your own deed; and, to use the prayers of the Litany, good Lord deliver me from this fervile dependance; for I had rather beg and starve, than be fed at that door.

God ever prosper your Lordship.

Your Lordship's most bounden and faithful servant,

Bedford-house, this

Indorfed,

To Buckingham, about Lord Treasurer Cranfield's using of him,

Remembrances of the Lord Viscount St. Alban, upon his going to the Lord Treasurer (x).

My Lord,

FOR past matters, they are memorial with me. I thank God I am so far from thinking to retrieve a fortune, as I did not mark where the game fell. I ascribe all to Providence. Your Lordship hath greatness; and I hope you will line it with good-

(x) These are written in Greek characters.
Of me you can have no use; but you may have honour by me, in using me well; for my fortune is much in your hands.

For Sir G. I heard by Sir Arthur (y), you thought well of my dealing to him; for so Ingram told me. But I doubt he reported somewhat amiss of me, that procured that warrant; since which he thinks he may bring me to his own conditions, never comes to me, flies from that he had agreed; so to conclude with the letter upon even terms.

For the King, I must submit. Ingram told me there should be a favour in it, till I might sue to the King.

The sequestration as much as a resumption; for if it be as in the King’s hands, all will go back; so it requires a farmer.

My pension and that the rewards of my long service, and relief of my present means. In parliament he said, he would not have me know what want meant.

La. B. (z),

Of York-house garden:
Of New-hall:
Of my being with my Lord Treasurer:
Of my business.
It is well begun: I desire it may be your act.
It is nothing out of the King’s purse: it laid fair; a third part of the profit.
The King bestows honour upon reward, one honour upon alms and charity.
Time, I hope, will work this, or a better.
I know my Lord will not forfake me.

(y) Ingram. (z) Lady Buckingham, mother of the Duke.

He
He can have but one mother. Friends wayfarers, some to Waltham, some to Ware, and where the ways part, farewell.

I do not desire to storge myself, nor pretensions, but for the comfort of a private life. Yet will I be ever at your and the King's call. Malcontent, or busy-body, I scorn to be.

Though my Lord shall have no use of me, yet he shall have honour by me.

For envy, the almanack of that year, is past.

You may observe last parliament, though an high-aiming parliament, yet not a petition, not a clamour, not a motion, not a mention of me. Visitations by all the noblemen about the town.

A little will make me happy: the debts I have paid.

I shall honour my Lord with pen and words; and be ready to give him faithful and free counsel, as ready, as when I had the seal; and mine ever suavisibus modis for safety, as well as for greatness.

The King and the Prince, I hear for certain, well-affected.

To dine with:
To go to New-hall.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

Excellent Lord,

I perceive this day, by Mr. Comptroller (a), that I live continually in your Lordship's remembrance, and noble purposes concerning my fortunes, as well for the comfort of my estate, as for countenancing me otherwise by his Majesty's employments and graces; for which I most humbly kiss your

(a) Henry Cary, Viscount Falkland.
hands, leaving the times to your good Lordship; which, considering my age and wants, I assure myself, your Lordship will the sooner take into your care. And for my house at Gorhambury, I do infinitely desire your Lordship should have it; and howsoever I may treat, I will conclude with none, till I know your Lordship's farther pleasure, ever resting

Your Lordship's most obliged,

and faithful servant,

Bedford-house, this 5th of Feb. 1622 (b).

FR. ST. ALBAN,

To the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

My very good Lord,

I Have received, by this bearer, the privy seal for the survey of coals, which I will lay aside, till I shall hear farther from my Lord Steward (c), and the rest of the Lords.

I am ready to do as much as your Lordship desireth, in keeping Mr. Cotton (d) off from the violence of those creditors: only himself is, as yet, wanting in some particular directions.

I heartily thank your Lordship for your book; and all other symbols of your love and affection,

(b) two days before the Marquis of Buckingham set out privately, with the Prince, for Spain. (c) Duke of Lenox.

(d) probably the surety of Lord Bacon, for the debt to Harris the goldsmith, mentioned in his Lordship's letter of May 30, 1622. which
which I will endeavour, upon all opportunities, to
deserve: and, in the mean time, do rest
Your Lordship's assured faithful
poor friend and servant,

Westminster-college,
this 7th of February, 1622.

Jo. Lincoln, C. S.

To the Right Honourable his very good Lord, the Lord
Viscount St. Alban.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

Excellent Lord,

THOUGH your Lordship’s absence (f) fall out
in an ill time for myself; yet because I hope in
God this noble adventure will make your Lordship a
rich return in honour, abroad and at home, and
chiefly in the inestimable treasure of the love and
trust of that thrice-excellent Prince; I confess I am
so glad of it, as I could not abstain from your Lord-
ship’s trouble in seeing it expressed by these few
and hasty lines.

I beseech your Lordship, of your nobleness vouch-
safe to present my most humble duty to his Highness,
who, I hope, ere long will make me leave King
Henry the Eighth, and set me on work in relation of
his Highness’s adventures.

I very humbly kiss your Lordship’s hands, resting
ever

Your Lordship’s most obliged friend and servant,

February 21, 1622.

(f) in Spain.
To the Marquis of Buckingham.

Excellent Lord,

Upon the repair of my Lord of Rochford unto your Lordship, whom I have ever known so fast and true a friend and servant unto you; and who knows likewise so much of my mind and affection towards your Lordship, I could not but kiss your Lordship's hands, by the duty of these few lines.

My Lord, I hope in God, that this your noble adventure will make you a rich return, especially in the inestimable treasure of the love and trust of that thrice-excellent Prince. And although to a man, that loves your Lordship so dearly, as I do, and knows somewhat of the world, it cannot be, but that in my thoughts there should arise many fears; or shadows of fears, concerning so rare an accident; yet nevertheless, I believe well, that this your Lordship's absence will rather be a glass unto you, to shew you many things, whereof you may make use hereafter, than otherwise any hurt or hazard to your fortunes, which God grant. For myself, I am but a man desolate till your return, and have taken a course accordingly. Vouchsafe, of your nobleness, to remember my most humble duty to his Highness. And so God, and his holy angels, guard you, both going and coming.

Indorsed, March 10, 1622.
To Sir Francis Cottington, Secretary to the
Prince.

Good Mr. Secretary,

THOUGH I wrote so lately unto you, by
my Lord Rochford; yet, upon the going of
my Lord Vaughan, the Prince's worthy and
trusty servant, and my approved friend, and your
so near ally, I could not but put this letter into his
hand, commending myself and my fortunes unto
you. You know the difference of obliging men in
prosperity and adversity, as much as the flowing upon
a pavement and upon a furrow new made. Myself
for quiet, and the better to hold out, am retired to
Grey's Inn: for when my chief friends were gone
so far off, it was time for me to go to a cell. God
send us a good return of you all.

I ever rest &c.

My humble service to my Lord Marquis, to whom
I have written twice. I would not cloy him. My
service also to the Count Gondomar, and Lord of
Bristol.

Indorsed,
To Mr. Secretary, Sir Francis Cottington, March 22,
1622.

(g) He was son and heir of Walter Vaughan, of Golden
Grove, in Caermarthenshire, Esq; and was created Lord Vaughan
in the year 1620. The Lord St. Alban, after he was delivered
from his confinement in the Tower, was permitted to stay at Sir
John Vaughan's house at Parson's Green, near Fulham.

(b) In a MS. letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carle-
ton, dated at London, March 8, 1623, is the following passage:
"The Lord of St. Alban is in his old remitter, and came to
lie in his old lodgings at Grey's Inn; which is the fulfilling
of a prophecy of one Locke, a familiar of his, of the fame
house, that knew him iustus et in ute; who, seeing him go
thence in pomp, with the great seal before him, said to divers
of his friends, we shall have him here again."
It may please your Majesty,

NOW that my friend is absent, (for so I may call him still, since your Majesty, when I waited on you, told me, that fortune made no difference) your Majesty remaineth to me King, and master, and friend, and all. Your Beadman therefore addresseth himself to your Majesty for a cell to retire into. The particular I have expressed to my very friend, Mr. Secretary Conway. This help, which costs your Majesty nothing, may reserve me to do your Majesty service, without being chargeable unto you: for I will never deny, but my desire to serve your Majesty is of the nature of the heart, that will be \textit{ultimum moriens} with me.

God preserve your Majesty, and send you a good return of the treasure abroad, which passeth all Indian fleets.

Your Majesty’s most humble

and devoted servant,

March 25, 1623.

Fr. St. ALBAN.

Indorsed,

\textit{To the King touching the provostship of Eton (i)}.

\textit{To Mr. Secretary Conway.}

Good Mr. Secretary,

WHEN you did me the honour and favour to visit me, you did not only in general terms express your love unto me, but, as a real friend,

(i) Mr. Thomas Murray, the Provost of that college, having been cut for the stone, died April 1, 1623.
asked me, whether I had any particular occasion, wherein I might make use of you? At that time I had none: now there is one fallen. It is, that Mr. Thomas Murray, Provost of Eton (whom I love very well) is like to die. It were a pretty cell for my fortune. The college and school, I do not doubt, but I shall make to flourish. His Majesty, when I waited on him, took notice of my wants, and said to me, that, as he was a King, he would have care of me. This is a thing somebody would have; and costs his Majesty nothing. I have written two or three words to his Majesty, which I would pray you to deliver. I have not expressed this particular to his Majesty, but referred it to your relation. My most noble friend, the Marquis, is now absent. Next to him I could not think of a better address than to yourself, as one likeliest to put on his affection. I rest

Your Honour's very affectionate friend,

Grey's Inn, the 25th of March, 1623.

FR. ST. ALBAN (k).

(k) To this letter Secretary Conway wrote an answer, acquainting the Lord Viscount St. Alban, that the King could not value his Lordship so little, or conceive, that he limited his desires so low; in which, however, he should have been gratified, had not the King been engaged, by the Marquis of Buckingham, for Sir William Becher, his agent in France. See Account of the Life of the Lord Bacon, p. xxvi, prefixed to the edition of his Letters, Memoirs, &c. by Robert Stephens, Esq. The Duke of Buckingham himself likewise, after his return from Spain, in a letter to the Lord Viscount St. Alban, dated at Hinchinbrook, October 27, 1623, expresses his concern, that he could do his Lordship no service in that affair, "having engaged myself, says he, to Sir William Becher, before my going into Spain; so that I cannot free myself, unless there were means to give him satisfaction."
To Count Gondomar, then in Spain.

Illufriflimo Comes,

MULTA sunt, quæ mihi animos addunt, et quandam alacritatem concilian, ut Dominationem tuam illufriflimam hoc tempore de meis fortunis compellam et deprecer. Primum, idque vel maximum, quod cum tam æcta regum nostrorum conjunctio jam habeatur pro transactâ, inde et tu factus sis intercessor tanto potentior; et mihi nullus jam subfit scrupulus univerfas fortunas meas viro tanto, licet externo, debendi et acceptas referendi. Secundum, quod cum ea, quæ Dominatio tua illufriflima de me promissò tenus præsens impetraveras, neque ullam repulsam passa sint, neque tamen ad exitum perduæc; videatur hoc innuere providentia divina, ut hoc opus me à calamitate eximendi planè tuum sit initio et fine. Tertium, quod stellæ duæ, quæ mihi semper fuerunt propitiæ, major et minor, jam splendent in urbe vestra, unde per radios auxiliares et benignos amors erga me tuus ponfunt nancisci influxum, qui me in aliquo non indigno priore fortuna gradu collocet. Quartum, quod perspexi ex literis, quas ad amicum meum intimum Dominum Tobium Matthæum nuper scripsisti, memoriam mei apud te vivere et vigere, neque tantâ negotiorum arduorum et sublimium mole, quanta Dom. tuæ incumbit, obritam esse aut extinctam. Postremum accidit et illud, quod postquam ex favore excellent. Domini Marchionis ad Regis mei conspectum et colloquium admissus fuerim, videar mihi in statu gratiae collocatus. Non me allocutus est Rex ut criminolum, sed ut hominem temppestate dejecrum; et simul constantem meum et perpetuum in fermenuo suo industriae et integritatis tenorem prolixè agnovit, cum insigni, ut videbatur, affectu: unde major mihi oboritur spes,
Lord

Chancellor B A C O N.

My Lord St. Alban's first letter to Gondomar, into Spain, March 28 1623.

To the Marquis of B U C K I N G H A M, in Spain.

Excellent Lord,

Finding so truely a messenger as Sir John Ep-
sley, I thought it my duty to put these few lines
into his hands. I thank God, that those shadows,
which either mine own melancholy, or my extreme
love to your Lordship, did put into my mind concern-
ing this voyage of the Prince and your Lordship,
rather vanish and diminish, than otherwise. The
gross fear is past of the paffage of France. I think
you had the ring, which they write of, that, when
the seal was turned to the palm of the hand, made
men go invisible. Neither do I hear of any novelty
here worth the esteeming.

There is a general opinion here, that your Lord-
ship is like enough to return, and go again, before
the Prince come: which opinion, whether the busi-
ness lead you to do so, or no, doth no hurt; for it
keeps men in awe.

Z

I find,
I find, I thank God, some glimmering of the King's favour, which your Lordship's noble work of my access, no doubt, did chiefly cherish. I am much bound to Mr. Secretary Conway. It is wholly for your Lordship's sake; for I had no acquaintance with him in the world. By that I see of him, he is a man fit to serve a great King, and fit to be a friend and servant to your Lordship. Good my Lord, write two or three words to him, both of thanks, and a general recommendation of me unto him.

Vouchsafe, of your nobleness, to present my most humble duty to his Highness. We hear he is fresh in his person, and becomes this brave journey in all things. God provide all things for the best.

I ever rest &c.

Indorsed, March 30, 1623.

To Mr. Secretary Conway.

Good Mr. Secretary,

I AM much comforted by your last letter, wherein I find, that his Majesty, of his mere grace and goodness, vouchsafeth to have a care of me, a man out of sight, out of use; but yet his, as the Scripture faith, God knows those, that are his. In particular, I am very much bound to his Majesty (and I pray you, Sir, thank his Majesty most humbly for it,) that, notwithstanding the former designment of Sir William Becher (1), his Majesty (as you write) is

(1) Sir William had not, however, that post; but, in lieu of it, the promise of 2500l. upon the fall of the first of the six clerks places, and was permitted to keep his clerkship of the council, MS. letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, dated at London, July 24, 1624. The provostship was given to Sir Henry Wotton, who was instituted into it the 26th of
is not out of hope, in due time, to accommodate me of this cell, and to satisfy him otherwise. Many conditions, no doubt, may be as contenting to that gentleman, and his years may expect them. But there will hardly fall, especially in the spent hourglass of my life, any thing so fit for me, being a retreat to a place of study so near London, and where (if I sell my house at Gorhambury, as I purpose to do, to put myself in some convenient plenty) I may be accommodate of a dwelling for summer time. And therefore, good Mr. Secretary, further this his Majesty's good intention, by all means, if the place fall.

For yourself, you have obliged me much. I will endeavour to deserve it: at least your nobleness is never lost; and my noble friend, the Marquis, I know, will thank you for it.

I was looking of some short papers of mine touching usury (m), to grind the teeth of it, and yet make it grind to his Majesty's mill in good sort, without discontentment, or perturbation. If you think good, I will send it to his Majesty, as the fruit of my leisure. But yet I would not have it come from me, not for any tenderness in the thing, but because I know, in courts of Princes, it is usual, non res, sed displiant autcor. God keep your Honour &c.

Indorsed,

To Mr. Secretary Conway, touching the Provostship of Eton, March 31, 1623.

of that month, having purchased it by a surrender of a grant of the reversion of the Mastership of the Rolls, and of another office, which was fit to be turned into present money, which he then, and afterwards, much wanted [Life of him by Mr. Isaac Walton:] for when he went to the election at Eton, soon after his being made Provost, he was so ill provided, that the Fellows of the College were obliged to furnish his bare walls, and whatever else was wanting. MS. letter of Mr. Chamberlain, Aug. 7, 1624.

(m) In his works is published, A Draught of an act against an Ambitious Shift of Gain, in delivering of Commodities, instead of Money.
ILLUSTRISIME Comes,


Cum nuper ad Dominationem tuam illustrissimam scripserim, eo brevior fio. Hoc tantum a te peto, ut etiam inter negotia, quæ feliciter administras, consuetam digeris Dom. Matthæo libertatem propone ndi et confulendi apud te ea, quæ in rem meam fore videbimus.
To the Earl of Bristol, Ambassador in Spain.

My very good Lord,

THOUGH I have written to your Lordship lately, yet I could not omit to put a letter into so good a hand as Mr. Matthew's, being one, that hath often made known unto me, how much I am beholden to your Lordship; and knoweth likewise in what estimation I have ever had your Lordship, not according to your fortunes, but according to your inward value. Therefore, not to hold your Lordship in this time of so great business, and where I have so good a mean as Mr. Matthew, who, if there be any thing that concerns my fortune, can better express it than myself, I humbly commend myself, and my service to your Lordship, resting &c.

To Sir Francis Cottington, Secretary to the Prince.

Good Mr. Secretary,

THOUGH I think I have cloyed you with letters, yet had I written a thousand before, I must add one more by the hands of Mr. Matthew, being as true a friend, as any you or I have; and one, that made me so happy, as to have the assurance of our friendship; which, if there be any stirring for my good, I pray practice in so good a conjunction as his. I ever rest &c.
To Mr. Tobit Matthew.

Good Mr. Matthew,

Because Mr. Clarke is the first, that hath been sent since your departure, who gave me also the comfortable news, that he met you well, I could not but visit you with my letters, who have so often visited me with your kind conferences.

My health, I thank God, is better than when you left me; and, to my thinking, better than before my last sickness. This is all I need to write of myself to such a friend.

We hope well, and it is generally rather spoken, than believed, that his Highness will return very speedily. But they be not the best pieces in painting, that are dashed out in haste. I hope, if anything want in the speed of time, it will be compensated in the fruit of time, that all may sort to the best.

I have written a few words, of duty and respect only, to my Lord Marquis, and Mr. Secretary. I pray you kifs the Count of Gondomar's hand.

God keep you.

Your most affectionate and assured friend,

May 2, 1623.

Fr. St. Alban.

To the Duke of Buckingham.

Excellent Lord,

I write now only to congratulate with your Grace your new honour (n); which because I reckon to be no great matter to your fortune (though you

(n) the title of Duke, conferred on him May 18, 1623.
are the first English Duke, that hath been created since I was born) my compliment shall be the shorter. So having turned almost my hopes of your Grace's return, by July, into wishes, and not to them neither, if it should be any hazard to your health, I rest &c.

Vouchsafe, of your nobleness, to present my most humble duty to his Highness. Summer is a thirsty time; and sure I am, I shall infinitely thirst to see his Highness's and your Grace's return.

Duke of Buckingham to the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

My good Lord,

I HAVE received your hearty congratulation for the great honour, and gracious favour, which his Majesty hath done me: and I do well believe, that no man is more glad of it than yourself.

Tobie Matthew is here; but what with the journey, and what with the affliction he endures, to find, as he says, that reason prevails nothing with these people, he is grown extreme lean, and looks as sharp as an eyas (o). Only he comforts himself with a conceit, that he is now gotten on the other side of the water, where the same reason, that is valuable in other parts of the world, is of no validity here; but rather something else, which yet he hath not found out.

I have let his Highness see the good expressions of your Lordship's care, and faithful affection to his person; and shall ever be ready to do you, in all things, the best service, that I can.

(o) A young hawk, just taken out of the nest.

Z 4
So wishing your Lordship much happiness, I rest

Your Lordship's faithful friend,
and humble servant,

Madrid, this 29th of May, 1623, post. 

G. BUCKINGHAM.

To the Duke of BUCKINGHAM, in Spain.

Excellent Lord,

I HUMBLY thank your Grace for your letter of the 29th of May; and that your Grace doth believe, that no man is gladder of the increase of your honour and fortune, than I am; as, on the other part, no man should be more sorry, if it should in the least degree decline, nor more careful, if it should so much as labour. But of the first, I speak as of a thing, that is: but for the two latter, it is but a case put, which I hope I shall never see. And, to be plain with your Grace, I am not a little comforted to observe, that, although in common sense and experience, a man would have doubted, that some things might have sorted to your prejudice; yet in particulars we find nothing of it. For a man might reasonably have feared, that absence and discontinuance might have lessened his Majesty's favour: no such thing has followed. So likewise, that any, that might not wish you well, should have been bolder with you. But all is continued in good compass. Again, who might not have feared, that your Grace being there to manage, in great part, the most important business of Europe, so far from the King, and not strengthened with advice there, except that of the Prince himself, and thus to deal with so politic a state as Spain, you should be able to go through as you do? and yet nothing, as we hear, but for your
your honour, and that you do your part. Surely, my Lord, though your virtues be great, yet these things could not be, but that the blessing of God, which is over the King and the Prince, doth likewise descend upon you as a faithful servant; and you are the more to be thankful to God for it.

I humbly thank your Grace, that you make me live in his Highness's remembrance, whom I shall ever bear an heart to honour and serve. And I much joy to hear of the great and fair reputation, which at all hands are given him.

For Mr. Matthew, I hope by this time he hath gathered up his crumbs; which importeth much, I assure your Grace, if his cure must be, either by finding better reason on that side the line, or by discovering, what is the motion, that moveth the wheels, that, if reason do not, we must all pray for his being in good point. But in truth, my Lord, I am glad he is there; for I know his virtues, and particularly his devotion to your Lordship.

God return his Highness, and your Grace, unto us safe and found, and according to your heart's desires.

To Mr. Tobie Matthew.

Good Mr. Matthew,

I have received your letter of the 10th of June (p), and am exceeding glad to hear you are in so good health. For that, which may concern myself, I neither doubt of your judgement in choosing the fittest time, nor of your affection in taking the first time you shall find fit. For the public business, I will not turn my hopes into wishes yet, since you write as you do; and I am very glad you are there,

(p) N. S.
there, and, as I guess, you went in good time to his Lordship.

For your action of the case, it will fall to the ground; for I have not heard from the Duke, neither by letter, nor message, at this time.

God keep you. I rest always

Your most affectionate and faithful servant,

Grey’s Inn, 17th of June, 1623.

FR. ST. ALBAN.

I do hear, from Sir Robert Ker and others, how much beholden I am to you.

To Mr. Tobie Matthew.

Good Mr. Matthew,

I THANK you for your letter of the 26th of June, and commend myself unto your friendship, knowing your word is good assurance, and thinking I cannot wish myself a better wish, than that your power may grow to your will.

Since you say the Prince hath not forgot his commandment, touching my History of Henry VIII, I may not forget my duty. But I find Sir Robert Cotton, who poured forth what he had, in my other work, somewhat dainty of his materials in this.

It is true, my labours are now most set to have those works, which I had formerly published, as that of Advancement of Learning, that of Henry VII, that of the Essays, being retractate, and made more perfect, well translated into Latin by the help of some good pens, which for sake me not. For these modern languages will, at one time or other, play the bankrupts with books: and since I have lost much time with this age, I would be glad, as God shall give me leave, to recover it with posterity.

For
For the essay of friendship, while I took your speech of it for a curliey request, I took my promise for a compliment. But since you call for it, I shall perform it (q).

I am much beholden to Mr. Gage for many expressions of his love to me; and his company, in itself very acceptable, is the more pleasing to me, because it retaineth the memory of yourself.

This letter of yours, of the 26th, lay not so long by you, but it hath been as speedily answered by me, so as with Sir Francis Cottington I have had no speech since the receipt of it. Your former letters, which I received from Mr. Griesley, I had answered before, and put my letter into a good hand.

For the great business, God conduct it well. Mine own fortune hath taught me expectation.

God keep you.

Indorsed, To Mr. Matthew, into Spain.

To Mr. TOBI E MATTHEW.

Good Mr. Matthew,

I HAVE received your letter, sent by my Lord of Andover; and, as I acknowledged your care, so I cannot fit it with any thing, that I can think on for myself; for since Gondomar, who was my voluntary friend, is in no credit, neither with the Prince, nor with the Duke, I do not see what may be done for me there; except that, which Gondomar hath loft, you have found; and then I am sure my case is amended: so, as with a great deal of confidence, I commend myself to you, hoping, that you will do what in you lieth, to prepare the Prince and Duke to

(q) Among his Essays, published in 4to, and dedicated to the Duke of Buckingham, is one upon Friendship.
think of me; upon their return. And if you have any relation to the Infanta, I doubt not but it shall be also to my use. God keep you.

Your most affectionate and assured friend, &c.

To the Duke of Buckingham.

Excellent Lord,

THOUGH I have formerly given your Grace thanks for your last letter, yet being muchrefreshed to hear things go so well, whereby we hope to see you here shortly, your errand done, and the Prince within the vail; I could not contain, but congratulate with your Lordship, seeing good fortune, that is God's blessing, still follow you. I hope I have still place in your love and favour; which if I have, for other place, it shall not trouble me. I ever rest

Your Grace's most obliged, and faithful servant.

July 22, 1623.

To the Duke of Buckingham.

Excellent Lord,

UPON Mr. Clarke's dispatch, in truth I was ill in health, as he might partly perceive. Therefore I wrote to my true friend, and your Grace's devoted servant, Mr. Matthew, to excuse me to your Grace for not writing. Since, I thank God, I am pretty well recovered; for I have lain at two wards, one against my disease, the other against my phisicians, who are strange creatures.

My Lord, it rejoiceth me much, that I understand from Mr. Matthew, that I live in your Grace's remembrance;
membrance; and that I shall be the first man, that you will think on upon your return: which if your Grace perform, I hope God Almighty, who hath hitherto extraordinarily blessed you in this rocky business, will bless you the more for my sake. For I have had extraordinary tokens of his divine favour towards me, both in sickness and in health, prosperity and adversity.

Vouchsafe to present my most humble duty to his Highness, whose happy arrival will be a bright morning to all. I ever rest

Your Grace's most obliged

and faithful servant,

Grey's Inn, August 29,
1623.

FR. ST. ALBAN.

To Mr. TOBIE MATTHEW.

Good Mr. Matthew,

I HAVE gotten a little health; I praise God for it. I have therefore now written to his Grace, that I formerly, upon Mr. Clarke's dispatch, desired you to excuse me for not writing, and taken knowledge, that I have understood from you, that I live in his Grace's remembrance; and that I shall be his first man, that he will have care of upon his return. And although your absence be to me as uncomfortable to my mind, as God may make it helpful to my fortunes; yet it is somewhat supplied by the love, freedom, and often visitations of Mr. Gage; so, as when I have him, I think I want you not altogether. God keep you.

Your most affectionate

and much obliged friend, &c.
Minutes of a Letter to the Duke of Buckingham.

That I am exceeding glad his Grace is come home (r) with so fair a reputation of a sound protestant, and so constant for the King’s honour a errand.

His Grace is now to consider, that his reputation will vanish like a dream, except now, upon his return, he do some remarkable act to fix it, and bind it in.

They have a good wise proverb in the country, whence he cometh, taken I think from a gentlewoman’s sampler, Qui en no da nudo, pierdo punto, “he, that “ tieth not a knot upon his thread, loseth his stitch.”

Any particular I, that live in darkness, cannot propound. Let his Grace, who seeth clear, make his choice: but let some such thing be done, and then this reputation will stick by him; and his Grace may afterwards be at the better liberty to take and leave off the future occasions, that shall present.

To the King.

It may please your most excellent Majesty,

I SEND, in all humbleness, to your Majesty, the poor fruits of my leisure. This book (s) was the first thing, that ever I presented to your Majesty (r);

(r) The Prince and Duke arrived from Spain in London, October 6, 1623.

(s) De Augmentis Scientiarum, printed at London, 1623, in fol.

The present to King James I, is in the royal library in the British Museum.

(c) The two books of Sir Francis Bacon of the Proficiency and Advancement of Learning, Divine and Human: printed at London, 1605, in 4to.
and it may be will be last. For I had thought it should have posthumia proles. But God hath other-
wise disposed for a while. It is a translation, but al-
most enlarged to a new work. I had good helps for the language. I have been also mine own index ex-
purgatorius, that it may be read in all places. For since my end of putting it into Latin was to have it read every where, it had been an absurd contradic-
tion to free it in the language, and to pen it up in the matter. Your Majesty will vouchsafe graciously to receive these poor sacrifices of him, that shall ever desire to do you honour, while he breaths, and ful-
fileth the rest in prayers.

Your Majesty's true beardsman,
and most humble servant, &c.

Todos duelos con pan son buenos: itaque det vestra Ma-
jestas obolum Bellisario.

To the Prince.

It may please your excellent Highness,

I SEND your Highness, in all humbleness, my book of Advancement of Learning, translated into Latin, but so enlarged, as it may go for a new work. It is a book, I think, will live, and be a citizen of the world, as English books are not. For Henry the Eighth, to deal truly with your Highness, I did so despair of my health this summer, as I was glad to choose some such work, as I might compass within days; so far was I from entering into a work of length. Your Highness's return hath been my re-
storative. When I shall wait upon your Highness, I shall give you a farther account. So I most hum-
ibly kiss your Highness's hands, resting.

Your Highness's most devoted servant.

I would
I would (as I wrote to the Duke in Spain) I could do your Highness's journey any honour with my pen. It began like a fable of the poets; but it deserveth all in a piece a worthy narration.

Conf. Buc. (*).

My Lord,

My counsels bear not so high an elevation, as to have for their mark busines of estate. That, which I level at, is your standing and greatness, which nevertheless I hold for a main pillar of the King's service.

For a parliament, I hold it then fit, when there have passed some more visible demonstrations of your power with the King, and your constancy in the way you are in: before not.

There are considerable, in this state, three sorts of men: the party of the Papists, which hate you; the party of the Protestants, including those they call Puritans, whose love is yet but green towards you; and particular great persons, which are most of them reconciled enemies, or discontented friends: and you must think there are a great many, that will magnify you, and make use of you for the breaking of the match, or putting the realm into a war; which after will return to their old bias.

For particulars, it is good to carry yourself fair; but neither to trust too far, nor to apply too much, but keep a good distance, and to play your own game, shewing yourself to have, as the bee hath, both of the honey, and of the stinging.

The speech now abroad is, "My Lord of Buck-
ingen's head is full of thoughts: he hath a great talk; either he must break, or the match must break. He was wont to go the King's ways; but

(*) Conference with Buckingham.  

now
now he goeth cross his way, he will easly lose his way."

There is a point nice to be managed, yea, and tender to be spoken of, which is your carriage between the King and the Prince; so that you may lose no manner of ground with the Prince; and yet the King may not think himself the more solitary, nor that you adore too much the sun-rising. Though this you may let down, that the way to have the King sure unto you is to keep great with the Prince.

Conf. with Bu. December 17, 1623.

YOU march bravely: but methinks you do not draw up your troops.

You must beware of these your pardons. If we make men less in awe, and respect you, urina chiara f.a fico al medico.

The points of the general advice.

If a war be proceeded in, to treat a strait league with France, under name of a renovation of the match with France. Three secret articles, the liberty of the German nation, whereof there is a fresh precedent of Henry the Second of France, that took it into protection prosperously, and to the arrest of the Emperor Charles's greatness. 2. The conservation of the liberties of the Low-Countries for the United Provinces, and open trade into the East and West Indies. Offer of mine own service upon a commission into France.

My Lord hath against him these disadvantages; the catholic party; the Spaniard; the envy and fear of particular great men; the nice point of carrying himself between the King and the Prince.

The knot, which is to be tied for his reputation, must either be advancing, or depreffing of persons, or putting by, or forwarding, of actions.
Conf. Buç. qu. and old store, January 2, 1623.

There is not an honester man in court than Montgomery (x).

To have some opportunity, by the D.'s means, to speak with the Prince in presence of the Duke.

To think, whether it be fit for me to speak with the King, and to seek access before parliament; if then.

The offer of my service to live a summer, as upon mine own delight, at Paris, to settle a fast intelligence between France and us.

I have somewhat of the French: I love birds, as the King doth, and have some childish mindedness, wherein we shall consent.

To think of Belfast's sending over into Ireland. Those, that find themselves obnoxious to parliament, will do all they can, that those things, which are likest to distaste the King, be first handled.

It is not to be forgotten, that as long as great men were in question, as in my case, all things went sweetly for the King. But the second meeting, when no such thing was, the pack went higher.

Weeding time is not yet come. Cott. Car.

qu. of Car.

The battery will be chiefly laid on the Prince's part, if they find any entry.

To be author of some counsel to the Prince, that tasteth of religion and virtue, let it be imputed, that he entertains him only in pleasures, like a Pe. Ga.

The things remarkable for your Grace, to fix and bind in the reputation, which you have gained, must be either persons, or matters.

(x) Philip, Earl of Montgomery, afterwards of Pembroke.

The
The doubt the Prince is mollis cera, and formed di ultima impression. Therefore good to have sure persons about him, or at least none dangerous.

For the pardons to proceed, it is a tender business. First, whatsoever useth to be done in parliament, is thankless. Then it is not good for his Grace, it will make men bolder with him. Urina chiara fa fico al medico. Lastly, remove the envy from others, it may beat upon my Lord himself, or the King.

Conf. B. January 2, 1623.

YOU have now tied a knot, as I wished you; qui en no da nudo, pierdo punto (y); a jolly one, the parliament. Although I could have wished, that before a parliament, some remarkable thing had been done, whereby the world might have taken notice, that you stand the same in grace and power with the King. But there is time enough for that between this and parliament (z). And besides, the very prevailing for a parliament sheweth your power with the King.

You march bravely. Do you draw up your troops so well?

One of these days I shall turn my Lord Brooke, and say to you, O brave Buckingham.

I will commend you to all others, and censure you only to yourself.

You bowl well, if you do not horse the bowl an hand too much. You know the fine bowler is knee almost to ground in the delivery of the cast.

Nay, and the King will put a hook in the nostrils of Spain, and lay a foundation of greatness here to

(y) "He that tieth not a knot upon his thread, loseth his "fitch."
(z) It met February 19, 1622.
his children, in these west parts. The call for me, it is book-learning. You know the King was wont to do me the honour, as to say of me, \textit{de minimis non curat lex}: if good for any thing, for great volumes, I cannot thread needles so well.

The Chamberlain \textit{(a)}: for his person, not effectual; but some dependances he hath, which are drawn with him. Besides, he can take no reputation from you. Montgomery is an honest man, and a good observer. Can you do nothing with Naunton \textit{(b)}? Who would think now, that I name Naunton to my Lord of Buckingham? But I speak to you point-blank: no crooked end, either for myself, or for others turn.

The French treaty, besides alliance, is to have three secret articles: the one, the protection of the liberty of Germany, and to avoid from it all forces thence, like to that, which was concluded between the Princes of Germany and Henry II \textit{(c)}, the last King, except Henry IV, of value in France; for the race of the Valois were \textit{faiteants}: and, in the name of Germany, to conclude the Grifons and Valtoline. The second, the conserving the liberties of the Low Countries. The third, the free trade into all parts of both East and West Indies. All these import no invasive hostility, but only the uniting of the states of Europe against the growing ambition of Spain. Neither do any of these touch upon the cause of religion.

I am persuaded, the hinge of the King's affairs, for his safety and greatness, is now in Spain. I would the King had an abler instrument.

Above all, you must look to the safety of Ireland, both because it is most dangerous for this state (for the diseafe will ever fall to the weakest part;) and be-

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{(a)} William, Earl of Pembroke.
  \item \textit{(b)} Sir Robert Naunton, who had been Secretary of State, and was now Master of the court of Wards.
  \item \textit{(c)} This league first arrested the greatness of the Emperor, and cloistered him. \textit{Note of Lord Bacon.}
\end{itemize}
sides, this early declaration against Spain, which the Popish party call abrupt, and is your Grace's work, may be thought to be the danger of Ireland. It were good you called to you Belfast (d) and Grandison (e), and ask their opinions, what is best to be done for the safety of Ireland, either by increasing the lift of companies, and by contenting those, that are in arrear, by paying; or by altering any governor there; or by having companies ready mustered and trained here, towards the coast of Ireland; or by having shipping in readiness, &c. For this gown commision, I like it well; but it is but paper-shot for defence.

If the Papists be put in despair, it both endangereth Ireland, and maketh a greater difficulty in the treaty and alliance with France.

To think of a difference to be put between the Jesuits and other Priests and Papists, as to reduce, in some moderation, the banishment of the one, though not of the other: but to remember, that they were the reasonablest, as I take it, in the consult; and it may draw the blow of an assassin against Buckingham.

At least, the going on with the parliament hath gained this, that the discourse is ceased, "My Lord of Buckingham hath a great task. His head is full: either the match breaks, or his fortune breaks. He has run his courses with the stream of the King's ways; but now he goeth cross-way, he may soon lose his own way."

If your Grace go not now constantly on for religion, and round dealing with Spain, men will either think they were mistaken in you; or that you are brought about; or that your will is good, but you have no power.

(d) Arthur Chichester, Baron of Belfast, who had been made Lord Deputy of Ireland in 1604.
(e) Oliver St. John, Viscount Grandison, made Lord Deputy of Ireland in August, 1616.
Your Grace hath a great party against you, and a good rough way. The Spaniards hate you: the Papists little better. In the opinion of the people, you are green, and not yet at a gage. Particulars are, for the most part, discontented friends, or reconciled enemies: and that nice dividing between the sol orient and acciden.

To the Duke of Buckingham.

Excellent Lord,

I DESIRE in this, which I now presume to write to your Grace, to be understood, that my bow carrieth not so high, as to aim to advise touching any of the great affairs now on foot, and so to pass it to his Majesty through your hands; though it be true, that my good affection towards his Majesty and the Prince and the public is that, which will last die in me; and though I think also his Majesty would take it but well, if, having been that man I have been, my honest and loyal mind should sometimes feed upon those thoughts. But my level is no farther, but to do the part of a true friend in advising yourself for your own greatness and safety; although, even in this also, I assure myself I perform a good duty to the public service, unto which I reckon your standing and power to be a firm and sound pillar of support.

First, therefore, my Lord, call to mind oft, and consider duly, how infinitely your Grace is bound to God in this one point, which I find to be a most rare piece, and wherein, either of ancient or late times, there are few examples; that is, that you are beloved so dearly, both by the King and the Prince. You are not as a Lerma, or an Olivares, and many others the like, who have insinuated themselves
selves into the favours of young Princes, during the
Kings, their fathers, time, against the bent and in-
clination of the Kings: but contrary-wise, the King
himself hath knit the knot of trust and favour between
the Prince and your Grace, wherein you are not so
much to take comfort in that you may seem to have
two lives in your own greatness, as in this, that
hereby you are enabled to be a noble instrument for
the service, contentment, and heart's-ease, both of
father and son. For where there is so loving and in-
dulgent a father, and so respective and obedient a
son, and a faithful and worthy servant, interested in
both their favours upon all occasions, it cannot be
but a comfortable house. This point your Grace is
principally to acknowledge and cherish.

Next, that, which I should have placed first, save
that the laying open of God's benefits is a good pre-
paration to religion and godliness, your Grace is to
maintain yourself firm and constant in the way you
have begun; which is, in being and shewing yourself
to be a true and sound Protestant. This is your soul's
health. This is that you owe to God above, for his
singular favours: and this is that, which hath
brought you into the good opinion and good will of
the realm in general. So that, as your case differeth
(as I said) from the case of other favourites, in that
you have both King and Prince; so in this, that you
have also now the hearts of the best subjects (for I do
not love the word people,) your case differeth from
your own, as it stood before. And because I would
have your reputation in this point complete, let me
advise you, that the name of Puritans in a Papist's
mouth do not make you to withdraw your favour
from such, as are honest and religious men; so that
they be not so turbulent and factious spirits, or ad-
verse to the government of the church, though they
be traduced by that name. For of this kind is the
greatest part of the body of the subjects; and besides,
(which is not to be forgotten) it is safest for the King and his service, that such men have their dependance upon your Grace, who are entirely the King's, rather than upon any other subject.

For the Papists, it is not unknown to your Grace, that you are not, at this time, much in their books. But be you like yourself; and far be it from you, under a King and Prince of that clemency, to be inclined to rigour or persecution.

But three things must be looked unto: the first, that they be suppressed in any insolency, which may tend either to disquiet the civil estate, or scandalize our church in fact; for otherwise, all their doctrine doth it in opinion. The second, that there be an end, or limit, of those graces, which shall be thought fit for them, and that there be not every day new demands hearkened to. The third, that for those cases and graces, which they have received, or shall receive, of the state, the thanks go the right way; that is, to the King and Prince, and not to any foreigner. For this is certain, that if they acknowledge them from the state, they may perhaps sit down, when they are well. But if they have a dependance upon a foreigner, there will be no end of their growing desires and hopes. And in this point also, your Lordship's wisdom and moderation may do much good.

For the match with Spain, it is too great and dark a business for me to judge of. But as it hath relation to concern yourself, I will, as in the rest, deal freely with your Grace.

My Lord, you owe, in this matter, two debts to the King: the one, that, if in your conscience and judgement you be persuaded it be dangerous and prejudicial to him and his kingdoms, you deliver your soul, and in the freedom of a faithful counsellor, joined with the humbleness of a dutiful servant, you declare yourself accordingly, and shew your reasons. The other, that if the King in his high judgement,
or the Prince in his settled affection, be resolved to have it go on; that then you move in their orb, as far as they shall lay it upon you. But mean while, let me tell your Grace, that I am not of the general opinion abroad, that the match must break, or else my Lord of Buckingham's fortune must break. I am of another opinion; and yet perhaps it will be hard to make you believe it, because both sides will persuade you to the contrary. For they, that would not have it go on, will work upon that conceit, to make you oppose it more strongly. They, that would have it go on, will do the same, to make you take up betimes, and come about. But I having good assurance in your Grace's judgement, will tell you my reasons, why I thus think, and so leave it. If the match should go on, and put case against your counsel and opinion; doth any man think, that so profound a King, and so well seen in the science of reigning, and so understanding a Prince, will ever suffer the whole sway of affairs and greatness to go that way? And, if not, who should be a fitter person to keep the balance even, than your Grace, whom the King and Prince know to be so entirely their own, and have found so nobly independent upon any other? Surely my opinion is, you are likely to be greater by counterpoise against the Spanish dependance, than you will by concurrence. And therefore, in God's name, do your duty faithfully and wisely; for behaving yourself well otherwise, as I know you will, your fortune is like to be well either way.

For that excellent Lady, whose fortune is so distant from her merits and virtue, the Queen of Bohemia, your Grace being, as it were, the first-born, or prime man of the King's creatures, must in consequence owe the most to his children and generations; whereof I know your noble heart hath far greater sense, than any man's words can infuse into you. And therefore whatsoever liveth within the compass
of your duty, and of possibility, will no doubt spring from you out of that fountain.

It is open to every man's discourse, that there are but two ways for the restitution of the Palatinate, treaty and arms. It is good therefore to consider of the middle acts, which may make either of these ways desperate, to the end they may be avoided in that way, which shall be chosen. If no match, either this with Spain, or perhaps some other with Austria, no restitution by treaty. If the Dutch, either be ruined, or grow to a peace, of themselves, with Spain, no restitution by war.

But these things your Grace understandeth far better than myself. And, as I said before, the points of state I aim not at farther, than they may concern your Grace, to whom, while I live, and shall find it acceptable to you, I shall ever be ready to give the tribute of a true friend and servant, and shall always think my counsels given you happy, if you shall pardon them, when they are free; and follow them, when they are good. God preserve and prosper you.

To the Duke of Buckingham (f).

Excellent Lord,

THERE is a suit, whereunto I may, as it were, claim kindred, and which may be of credit and profit unto me; and it is an old arrear, which is called upon, from Sir Nicolas Bacon, my eldest brother. It may be worth to me perhaps two thousand pounds; and yet I may deal kindly with my brother, and also reward liberally (as I mean to do) the officers of the Exchequer, which have brought it to light. Good my Lord obtain it of the King, and be earnest in it for me. It will acquit the King somewhat of his

(f) The Duke's answer to this letter, dated at Newmarket, the 28th of January, 1623, is printed in Lord Bacon's works.
promisethathewouldhavecareofmywants;for
hitherto, since my misfortunes, I have tasted of his
Majesty's mercy, but not of his bounty. But your
Lordship may be pleased in this, to clear the coast with
my Lord Treasurer; else there it will have astop.
I am almost at last cast for means; and yet it grieveth
me most, that at such a time as this, I should not be
rather serviceable to your Grace, than troublesome.
God preserve and prosper your Grace.

Your Grace's most obliged,
and faithful servant,

This 23d of January,
1623.

FR. ST. ALBAN.

To the Earl of Oxford (g).

My very good Lord,

LET me be an humble suitor to your Lordship;
for your noble favour. I would be glad to re-
ceive my writ this parliament (b), that I may not die
in dishonour; but by no means, except it should be
with the love and consent of my Lords to re-admit
me, if their Lordships vouchsafe to think me wor-
thy of their company; or if they think that, which
I have suffered now these three years, in loss of place,
in lossofmeans,andinlossoffreedomforagreat
time, to be a sufficient expiation for my faults, where-
by I may now seem in their eyes to be a fit subject
of their grace, as I have been before of their justice.
MygoodLord,thegood,whichthecommonwealth
might reap of my suffering, is already inneed. Justice

(g) Henry Vere, who died in 1625. He was Lord Great
Chamberlain of England.

(b) that met February 19, 1623, and was prorogued May 29,
1624.
is done; an example is made for reformation; the authority of the House for judicature is established. There can be no farther use of my misery; perhaps some little may be of my service; for, I hope, I shall be found a man humbled as a Christian, though not dejected as a worldling. I have great opinion of your Lordship's power, and great hope, for many reasons, of your favour; which, if I may obtain, I can say no more, but nobleness is ever requited in itself; and God, whose special favour in my afflictions I have manifestly found to my comfort, will, I trust, be my pay-master of that, which cannot be requited by

Your Lordship's affectionate humble servant, &c.

Indorsed, February 2, 1623.

To Sir Francis Barnham (i).

Good Cousin,

Upon a little searching, made touching the patents of the survey of coals, I find matter not only to acquit myself, but likewise to do myself much right.

Any reference to me, or any certificate of mine, I find not. Neither is it very likely I made any; for that, when it came to the great seal, I stayed it. I did not only stay it, but brought it before the council-table, as not willing to pass it, except their Lordships allowed it. The Lords gave hearing to the business, I remember, two several days; and in

(i) He appears to be a relation of his Lordship's Lady, who was daughter of Benedict Barnham, Esq; Alderman of the city of London. Sir Francis was appointed, by his Lordship, one of the executors of his last will.
the end disallowed it, and commended my care and circumvention, and ordered, that it should continue stayed; and so it did all my time.

About a twelvemonth since, my Lord Duke of Lenox, now deceased (k), wrote to me to have the privy seal; which, though I respected his Lordship much, I refused to deliver to him, but was content to put it into the right hand; that is, to send it to my Lord Keeper (l), giving knowledge how it had been stayed. My Lord Keeper received it by mine own servant, writeth back to me, acknowledging the receipt, and adding, that he would lay it aside until his Lordship heard farther from my Lord Steward (m), and the rest of the Lords. Whether this first privy seal went to the great seal, or that it went about again, I know not: but all my part is, that I have related. I ever rest

Your faithful friend and cousin,
March 14, 1623.
FR. ST. ALBAN.

To the Duke of Buckingham.

My Lord,

I AM now full three years old in misery; neither hath there been any thing done for me, whereby I might either die out of ignominy, or live out of want. But now, that your Grace (God's name be praised for it) hath recovered your health, and are come to the court, and the parliament business hath also intermission; I firmly hope, your Grace will deal with his Majesty, that as I have tasted of:

(t) He died suddenly, February 12, 1623.
(l) See his letter to Lord St. Alban, of February 7, 1622.
(m) James, Marquis of Hamilton, who died March 2, 1624.
his mercy, I may also taste of his bounty. Your Grace, I know, for a business of a private man, cannot win yourself more honour; and I hope I shall yet live to do you service. For my fortune hath (I thank God) made no alteration in my mind, but to the better. I ever rest humbly

Your Grace's most obliged
and faithful servant,

Fr. St. Alban.

If I may know by two or three words from your Grace, that you will set in for me, I will propound somewhat that shall be modest, and leave it to your Grace, whether you will move his Majesty yourself, or recommend it by some of your Lordship's friends, that with me well; [as my Lord of Arundel, or Secretary Conway, or Mr. James Maxwell (n).]

To the Duke of Buckingham.

Excellent Lord,

I UNDERSTAND, by Sir John Suckling, that he attended yesterday at Greenwich, hoping, according to your Grace's appointment, to have found you there, and to have received your Grace's pleasure touching my suit, but missed of you: and this day he sitteth upon the subsidy at Brentford; and shall not be at court this week: which causeth me to use these few lines to hear from your Grace, I hope, to my comfort; humbly praying pardon, if I num-

(n) The words included in brackets have a line drawn after them.
ber thus the days, and that misery should exceed modesty. I ever rest

Your Grace's most faithful
and obliged servant,

June 30, 1624.

Fr. St. Alban.

To Sir Richard Weston, Chancellor of the Exchequer.

Mr. Chancellor,

T H I S way, by Mr. Myn, besides a number of little difficulties it hath, amounteth to this, that I shall pay interest for mine own money. Besides, I must confess, I cannot bow my mind to be a suitor, much less a shifter, for that means, which I enjoy by his Majesty's grace and bounty. And therefore I am rather ashamed of that I have done, than minded to go forward. So that I leave it to yourself what you think fit to be done in your honour and my case, resting

Your very loving friend,

London, this 7th of July, 1624.

Fr. St. Alban.

To the Duke of Buckingham.

Excellent Lord,

N O W that your Grace hath the King private, and at better leisure, the noise of soldiers, ambassadors, parliaments, a little ceasing, I hope you will remember your servant; for at so good a time,
368 LETTERS, &c. of

time (o), and after so long a time, to forget him, were
almost to forfake him. But, howsoever, I shall still
remain

Your Grace's most obliged
and faithful servant,

FR. ST. ALBAN.

I am bold to put into my good friend, Sir Tobie
Matthew's hand, a copy of my petition, which your
Grace had sent to Sir John Suckling.

Indorsed, August, 1624.

To the Duke of BUCKINGHAM.

Excellent Lord,

I am infinitely bound to your Grace for your late
favours. I send your Grace a copy of your letter,
signifying his Majesty's pleasure, and of the petition.
The course, I take it, must be, to make a warrant
for the execution of the same, by way of reference to
Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer, and Mr. Attorney (p). I most humbly pray your Grace likewise,
to prostrate me at his Majesty's feet, with most
humble thanks for the grant of my petition, whose
sweet presence since I discontinued, methinks I am
neither amongst the living, nor amongst the dead.

I cannot but likewise gratulate his Majesty on the
extreme prosperous success of his business, since this
time twelvemonth. I know I speak it in a dangerous
time;

(o) This seems to refer to the anniversary thanksgiving-day
for the King's delivery from the Gowry conspiracy, on the 5th
of August, 1600.
(p) Sir Thomas Coventry.
time; because the dye of the Low Countries is upon the throw. But yet that is all one. For if it should be a blow (which I hope in God it shall not) yet it would have been ten times worse, if former courses had not been taken. But this is the raving of an hot ague.

God evermore bless his Majesty's person and designs, and likewise make your Grace a spectacle of prosperity, as you have hitherto been.

Your Grace's most faithful,
and obliged, and by you revived servant,

Grey's Inn, 9th of October, 1624.

FR. ST. ALBAN.

To the Chancellor of the Ducky (q), Sir Humphrey May.

Good Mr. Chancellor,

I do approve very well your forbearance to move my suits, in regard the Duke's return (r) is so near at hand, which I thought would have been a longer matter; and I imagine there is a gratiasitium till he come. I do not, but you shall find his Grace nobly disposed. The last time that you spake with him about me, I remember you sent me word, he thanked you for being so forward for me. Yet I could wish, that you took some occasion to speak with him, generally to my advantage, before you move to him any particular suit; and to let me know how you find him.

My Lord Treasurer sent me a good answer touching my monies. I pray you continue to quick-

(q) This letter is indorsed, 1625.

(r) From Paris, whither the Duke of Buckingham went in May, 1625, to conduct the new Queen to England.
en him, that the King may once clear with me. A fire of old wood needeth no blowing; but old men do. I ever rest

Yours to do you service.

Consultations in Parliament anno 1 Caroli Regis, at Westminster, anno Domini 1625 (s). [Found among Lord Bacon's papers.]

The consultations now in parliament may be regulated into these four heads following.

1. What it was; and how far the introitus et exitus there ordered. 
   Vide my book of a medium for ten years before primo Jacobi Regis.

2. What now it is in clear revenue, either by
   Lands;
   Customs, and impositions;
   Casualties.
   Gifts of land, ex more motu, and no valuable consideration.
   This may be revoked.
   Grants of pensions, now 120,000 l. before but 18,000 l. Good times have resumed them upon necessity.
   Increase of household, from 45,000 l. to 80,000 l.

(s) This parliament met on the 18th of June, and was dissolved August 12, 1625.
The purveyors more, and the tables less furnished than formerly.

Fruitless ambassages with larger allowance than formerly. To reduce them to the ordinary of the late Queen.

Treble increase of the privy purse. Double increase of the treasury of the chamber and great wardrobe. In all, by not using the best course of assignments, whereby the creditor is delayed in his payment, and the King furcharged in the price.

The exchequer-man making his best profit from the King's wants.

Subsidies and fifteenths, spent only in defence of the states, or aid of our allies.

Tonnage and poundage employed in guard of the seas. Loans rarely, and that employed entirely for the public. Imposition by prerogative, of old custom, rated easily by the book of rates, if any, either limited to time or measure.
Custom increased by the new books of rates. Impositions and monopolies multiplied; and this settled to continue by grants.

Tonnage and poundage levied, though no act of parliament, nor the seas guarded. The times, the ways, and the persons, that induced these.

What sums have been granted for the defence of the state these last three years.

How in particular spent, and where.

1. The counsel of war appointed by parliament.

2. By full order of the council.

3. By any other than those, and by whom.

1. The Palatinate.

2. Count Mansfield.

3. Land soldiers in the last fleet.

The
The design, where they were sent.
The council, that directed it.
The success of the action, and the return of the persons in number, and the loss.

The number and quantity employed severally.
The manner of imbarKing these ships, and what prejudice and discouragement of trade.
The council, that directed such employments.
The several successess, as at Argier, and Cadiz.

4. Our own.

3. In ships and munition of

5. Strangers, as prize.

6. Allies.

Hired by contract to serve, and how used: or,
Taken as prize: if so,
How then delivered and dealt withal in the course of justice.
What success hath followed upon injustice done them: as the arrest of our goods in France and Germany, whereby our goods are at a stand for vent.
The number and true value of the goods.
The account made to his Majesty, or his officers, for it.

7. Enemies.

1. By whom the direction.
2. The pretence of any of them.
3. The value of and the goods.
4. The place, whether they went.

Under this head will fall the complaint of Dover.

A nation feared, renowned, victorious.

It made the Netherlands there a state, when it was none.

Recovered Henry IV. of France’s kingdom, when he had nothing left but the town of Dieppe.

Conquered the invincible navy of Spain in 88.

Took towns in Portugal the year following, and marched 100 miles upon the firm land.

Fired, or brought away, the Spanish navy before Cadiz, and sacked the town.

Took the Spanish ships daily, and spoiled the Porttowns of the West-Indies, never losing but one ship during all the Spanish wars.

Reduced the ambition of that King for a fifth monarchy to so low an ebb, that in one
one year he paid 2500 millions of ducats for interest, so as after he was inforced to beg treaties of peace, in low terms, at the last Queen Regent's hands.

A carriage and readiness in the people to assist their sovereign in purse and person.

A wisdom and gravity of council, who ordered nothing but by public debate, and then assisted by the military professors either by land or sea, of the best repute, and such only employed.

In the voyage of Algier.

In the Palatinate.

In the journey with Mansfield.

In this last to Cadiz (f).

The unceasing we have either to adventure our purses or goods, occasioned by a distrust we have of the successes.

The want of the like courses and counsels, that were formerly used.

(a) In October, 1625.

B 4

I could
I could wish, that for every of these four heads, there were a particular committee to examine an apt report for the Houses: and the Houses, upon every report, to put itself into a committee of the whole assembly; and, after a full and deliberate debate, to order a model, or form, for a conference with the Lords: and so, together, humbly to present unto his Majesty a remonstrance of their labour; offering withal a serious consultation and debate amongst themselves for the finding out the fittest manner both for the defence of the state and our allies, reformation of the errors, and a constant way to raise such supplies of money and necessaries, as may enable his Majesty to proceed cheerfully, and I hope assuredly, in this his glorious action, not only for himself and the state, but for all that profess the same religion, and are alike to be overwhelmed in the ambition of the Spanish monarchy.

To Sir Robert Pye.

Good Sir Robert Pye,

Let me intreat you to dispatch that warrant of a petty sum, that it may help to bear my charge of coming up (x) to London. The Duke, you know, loveth me, and my Lord Treasurer (y) standeth now towards me in very good affection and respect (z). You, that are the third person in these business, I assure myself, will not be wanting;

(x) From Gorhambury.
(y) Sir James Lord Ley, advanced from the post of Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, on the 20th of December 1624, to that of Lord Treasurer; and created Earl of Marlborough on the 5th of February, 1625.
(z) His Lordship had not been always in that disposition towards the Lord Viscount St. Alban; for the latter has, among the letters printed in his works, one to this Lord Treasurer, severely expostulating with him about his unkindness and injustice.
for you have professed and shewed, ever since I lost the seal, your good will towards me. I rest

Your affectionate and assured friend, &c.

Indorsed, To Sir Robert Pye. Cor. 1625.

To the Earl of Dorset (a).

My very good Lord,

This gentleman, the bearer hereof, Mr. Colles by name, is my neighbour. He is commended for a civil young man. I think he wanteth no metal, but he is peaceable. It was his hap to fall out with Mr. Matthew Francis, serjeant at arms, about a toy; the one affirming, that a hare was fair killed, and the other foul. Words multiplied, and some blows passed on either side. But since the first falling out, the serjeant hath used towards him divers threats and affronts, and, which is a point of danger, sent to him a letter of chalenge: but Mr. Colles, doubting the contents of the letter, refused to receive it. Motions have been made also of reconcilement, or of reference to some gentlemen of the country not partial: but the serjeant hath refused all, and now, at last, sueth him in the Earl Marshal's court. The gentleman faith, he distrusteth not his cause upon the hearing; but would be glad to avoid restraint, or long and chargeable attendance. Let me therefore pray your good Lordship to move the noble Earl (b) in that kind, to carry a favourable hand towards him, such as may stand

(a) Sir Edward Sackville succeeded to that title on the death of his brother Richard, March 28, 1624.
(b) Arundel, Earl Marshal.
Your Lordship's faithful friend and servant.

Indorsed, To E. Dorset. Gor. 1625.

Sir Thomas Coventry, Attorney General, to the Lord Viscount St. Albani.

My very good Lord,

I received from your Lordship two letters, the one of the 23d, the other of the 28th of this month. To the former, I do assure your Lordship I have not heard any thing of any suits or motion, either touching the reversion of your honours or the rent of your farm of petty writs; and, if I had heard any thing thereof, I would not have been unmindful of that caveat, which heretofore you gave in by former letters, nor slack to do you the best service I might.

The debt of Sir Nicolas Bacon resteth as it did; for in the latter end of King James's time, it exhibited a quo warranto in the Exchequer, touching that liberty, against St. Nicolas, which abated by his death; then another against Sir Edmund, which by the demise of the King, and by reason of the adjournment of the late term, hath had no farther proceeding, but that day is given to plead.

Concerning your other letter, I humbly thank your Lordship for your favourable and good wishes to me; though I, knowing my own unaptness to so great an employment (c), should be most heartily glad, if his Majesty had, or yet would choose, a man of more merit. But, if otherwise, humbleness

(d) that of the great seal, of which Sir Thomas Coventry was three days after made Lord Keeper, on the 1st of November 1625.

and
and submission becomes the servant, and to stand in that station where his Majesty will have him. But as for the request you make for your servant, though I protest I am not yet engaged by promise to any, because I hold it too much boldness towards my master, and discourtesy towards my Lord Keeper (d), to dispose of places, while he had the seal: yet in respect I have some servants, and some of my kindred, apt for the place you write of, and have been already so much importuned by noble persons, when I lately was with his Majesty at Salisbury, as it will be hard for me to give them all denial; I am not able to discern, how I can accommodate your servant; though for your sake, and in respect of the former knowledge myself have had of the merit and worth of the gentlemen, I should be most ready and willing to perform your desire, if it were in my power. And so, with remembrance of my service to your Lordship, I remain

At your Lordship's commandment,

King'sbury,
Okt. 29, 1625.

Tho. Coventry.

To the Right Honourable, and my very good Lord, the Viscount St. Alban.

To Mr. Roger Palmer.

Good Mr. Roger Palmer,

I thank God, by means of the sweet air of the country, I have obtained some degree of health. Sending to the court, I thought

(c) Bishop Williams, who had resigned the great seal, on the 25th of October 1625, to Sir John Suckling, who brought his Majesty's warrant to receive it, dated at Salisbury on the 23d of that month.

I would
I would salute you: and I would be glad, in this solitary time and place, to hear a little from you how the world goeth, according to your friendly manner heretofore.

Fare ye well most heartily.

Your very affectionate and assured friend,
Gorhambury,
Okt. 29, 1625.

FR. ST. ALBAN.

To the Duke of BUCKINGHAM.

Excellent Lord,

I could not but signify unto your Grace my rejoicing, that God hath sent your Grace a son and heir (e), and that you are fortunate as well in your house, as in the state of the kingdom. These blessings come from God, as I do not doubt but your Grace doth, with all thankfulness, acknowledge, vowing to him your service. Myself, I praise his divine Majesty, have gotten some step into health. My wants are great; but yet I want not a desire to do your Grace service; and I marvel, that your Grace should think to pull down the monarchy of Spain without my good help. Your Grace will give me leave to be merry, however the world goeth with me. I ever rest

Your Grace's most faithful,
and obliged servant, &c.

I wish your Grace a good new year.

To Sir Humphrey May, Chancellor of the Duky of Lancaster.

Good Mr. Chancellor,

I did wonder what was become of you, and was very glad to hear you were come to court; which, methinks, as the times go, should miss you as well as I.

I send you another letter, which I wrote to you of an old date, to avoid repetition; and I continue my request then to you, to found the Duke of Buckingham’s good affection towards me, before you do move him in the particular petition. Only the present occasion doth invite me to desire, that his Grace would procure me a pardon of the King of the whole sentence. My writ for parliament I have now had twice before the time, and that without any express restraint not to use it. It is true, that I shall not be able, in respect of my health, to attend in parliament; but yet I might make a proxy. Time hath turned envy to pity; and I have a long cleansing week of five years expectation and more. Sir John Bennet hath his pardon; and my Lord of Somerfet hath his pardon, and, they say, shall sit in parliament. My Lord of Suffolk cometh to parliament, though not to council. I hope I deserve not to be the only outcast.

God keep you. I ever rest

Your most affectionate friend,

to do you service.

I wish you a good new year.

Indorsed, To the Chancellor of the Duky. Cor. 1625.
To the Marquis d'Effiat, the French Ambassador.

Monseigneur l'Ambassadeur, mon fils,

VOUS savez que le commencement est la moitié du fait. Voyla pourquoi je vous ay écrit ce petit mot de lettre, vous priant de vous souvenir de votre noble promesse de me mettre en la bonne grace de noftrie tres-excellente Royne, et m'en faire recevoir quelque gracieuse démonstration. Votre Excellence prendra aussi, s'il vous plaifit, quelque occasion de prescher un peu à mon avantage en l'oreille du Duc de Buckingham en general. Dieu vous ayt en sa faincte garde.

Voître tres-affectionné

et tres-humble ferviteur,

Fr. St. Alban,

Jan. 18, 1625.
The following letters, wanting both dates and circumstances to determine such dates, are placed here together.

To King James I.

May it please your Majesty,

THINKING often, as I ought, of your Majesty’s virtue and fortune, I do observe, not without admiration, that those civil acts of sovereignty, which are of the greatest merit, and therefore of truest glory, are, by the providence of God, manifestly put into your hands, as a chosen vessel to receive from God, and an excellent instrument to work amongst men the best and noblest things. The highest degree of sovereign honour is to be founder of a kingdom or estate; for, as in the acts of God, the creation is more than the conservation; and as, among men, the birth-day is accounted the chiefest of the days of life; so, to found a kingdom, is more worthy, than to augment, or to administer the same. And this is an honour, that no man can take from your Majesty, that the day of your coming to the crown of England was as the birthday of the kingdom intire Britain.

The next degree of sovereign honour is the plantation of a country or territory, and the reduction of a nation, from waste, soil and barbarous manners, to a civil population. And in this kind also your Majesty hath made a fair and prosperous beginning in your realm of Ireland.

The third eminent act of sovereignty is to be a law-giver, whereof he speaketh,

Pace datá terris, animum ad civilia vertit
Jura suum, legisique tulit justissimus author.

And
384  LETTERS, &c. of

And another faith, “ Ecquid est, quod tam pro-
“ priè dici potest actum ejus, qui togatus in re-
“ publica cum potestate imperioque verlatur, quam
“ lex. Quære acta Gracchi; leges Semproniae pro-
“ ferentur: quære Syllæ, Corneliae quid? Cnei
“ Pompeii tertius consulatus in quibus actis con-
“ sìt? Nempe legibus. A Cæsare ipso si quœrerès
“ quidnam egisset in urbe et toga; leges multas fe
“ respondeat et præclaras tulisse,”

To the King.

It may please your Majesty,

A Full heart is like a full pen: it can hardly make
any distinguished work. The more I look
upon my own weakness, the more I must magnify
your favours; and the more I behold your favours,
the more I must consider mine own weaknesses. This
is my hope, that God, who hath moved your heart
to favour me, will write your service in my heart.
Two things I may promise; for, though they be not
mine own, yet they are surer than mine own, be-
cause they are God’s gifts; that is, integrity and
industry. And therefore, whencesoever I shall make
my account to you, I shall do it in these words,
ecce tibi lucifeci, and not ecce mibi lucifeci. And
for industry, I shall take to me, in this procuration,
not Martha’s part, to be busied in many things, but
Mary’s part, which is to intend your service; for the
lefts my abilities are, the more they ought to be con-
tracted ad unum. For the present, I humbly pray
your Majesty to accept my most humble thanks
and vows as the forerunners of your service, which
I shall always perform with a faithful heart.

Your Majesty’s most obedient servant,

Fr. Bacon.

To
To the KING's Most Excellent Majesty

The humble petition of the Lord VERULAM, Viscount ST. ALBAN.

THAT whereas your supplicant, for reward of full sixteen years service in the painfulest places of your kingdom, (how acceptable or useful, he appealeth to your Majesty's gracious remembrance) had of your Majesty's gracious bounty two grants, both under the great seal of England; the one a pension of 1200l. the other a farm of the petty writs, about 600l. per annum in value, which was long since assigned to your supplicant's wife's friends in trust for her maintenance: which two grants are now the substance of your supplicant's and his wife's means, and the only remains of your Majesty's former favours, except his dignities, which, without means, are but burdens to his fortunes:

So it is, most gracious Sovereign, that both these are now taken from him; the pension stopped, the lease seized, the pension being, at this present, in arrear 500l. and at Michaelmas 800l. is stopped, as he conceiveth, upon the general stop of pensions; though he hopeth assurely, that your Majesty, that looketh with the gracious eye of a King, and not the strict eye of an officer, will behold his case as especial, if not singular. The latter was first seized for satisfaction of a private gentleman, your supplicant unheard, and without any shadow of a legal course. Since it hath been continued, in respect of a debt to your Majesty for the arrear of rent upon the same farm, amounting to 1500l. But whereas your Majesty's farmers debtors for their rents, and other your debtors, have usually favours, sometimes of retaliation, sometimes upon equity, if their farms decay; or at least when they are called upon, have days given,
given, put in security, or the like; your suppliant was never so much as sent to, no warnings to provide, no days given, but put out of possession suddenly, by a private and peremptory warrant, without any spark of those favours used to the meanest subjects. So that now your suppliant having left little or no annual income, is in great extremity, having spread the remnant of his former fortunes in jewels and plate, and the like, upon his poor creditors, having scarce left bread to himself and family.

In tender consideration whereof, your suppliant, and overthrown servant, doth implore your Majesty's grace and goodness felt by so many, known to all, and whereof he cannot live to despair; first, in general, that your Majesty will not suffer him, upon whose arm your princely arm hath so often been, when you presided in counsel (so near he was) and who hath borne your image in metal, but more in his heart, utterly to perish; or, which is worse, to live, in his last days, in an abject and fordid condition. Next, in particular, that your Majesty would be graciously pleased to take present order to have the arrear of his pension paid, and likewise that for the future it may be settled, that he be not at courtesy, nor to beg at that door, which is like enough to be shut against him. Secondly, that the possession of his wife's lease may be restored to her; and this bit of arrear to your Majesty, that you will be pleased to remit it, according to your Majesty's gracious and pious promise, when you admitted him to you in the night of his troubles, which was, that you would not meddle with his estate, but to mend it. In the restoring the possession, you shall remove your hand of arms: in the remitting of the rent, you shall extend your hand of grace: and if he be not worthy of so much favour, as to have it released yet, that it may be repstited for some good time, that he may make somewhat of that his father left him, and keep him-
himself out of want, in such sort, that your suppliant, that aspireth but to live to study, be not put to study to live. And he, according to his bounden duty, shall not intermit, as ever he hath done, to pray to God for your Majesty's health and happiness.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I hear yesterday was a day of very great honour to his Majesty, which I do congratulate. I hope also his Majesty may reap honour out of my adversity, as he hath done strength out of my prosperity. His Majesty knows best his own ways; and for me to despair of him, were a sin not to be forgiven. I thank God I have overcome the bitterness of this cup by Christian resolution; so that worldly matters are but mint and cumin.

God ever preserve you.

Indorsed, To my Lord Buckingham after my troubles.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

I thought it my duty to take knowledge to his Majesty, from your Lordship, by the inclosed, that, much to my comfort, I understand his Majesty doth not forget me nor forlack me, but hath a gracious inclination to me, and taketh care of me; and to thank his Majesty for the same. I perceive, by some speech, that passed between your Lordship and Mr. Meautys, that some wretched detractor hath told you, that it were strange I should be in debt;
LETTERS, &c. of

debt; for that I could not but have received an hundred thousand pound gifts since I had the seal; which is an abominable falsehood. Such tales as these made St. James say, that the tongue is a fire, and itself fired from Hell, whither when these tongues shall return, they will beg a drop of water to cool them. I praise God for it, I never took peny for any benefice or ecclesiastical living; I never took peny for releasing any thing I stopped at the seal; I never took peny for any commission, or things of that nature; I never shared with any servant for any second or inferior profit. My offences I have myself recorded, wherein I studied, as a good confessor, guiltinesfs, and not excuse; and therefore I hope it leaves me fair to the King's grace, and will turn many men's hearts to me.

As for my debts, I shewed them your Lordship, when you saw the little house and the farm, besides a little wood or desert, which you saw not.

If these things were not true, although the joys of the penitent be sometimes more than the joys of the innocent, I could not be as I am.

God bless you, and reward you for your constant love to me. I rest, &c.

Draught of a Letter to the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM, not sent (f).

My Lord,

I say to myself, that your Lordship hath forsaken me; and I think I am one of the last, that findeth it, and in nothing more, than that twice at London

(f) Among Lord Bacon's printed letters, is one without a date, in which he complains, as in this, that he being twice now in London the Marquis did not woulsfife to see him.

your
Your Lordship would not vouchsafe to see me, though the latter time I begged it of you. If your Lordship lack any justification about York-house, good my Lord, think of it better; for I assure your Lordship, that motion to me was to me as a second sentence; for I conceived it sentenced me to the loss of that, which I thought was saved from the former sentence, which is your love and favour. But sure it could not be that pelting matter, but the being out of sight, out of use, and the ill offices done me, perhaps, by such, as have your ear. Thus I think, and thus I speak; for I am far enough from any bafenefs or detracting, but shall ever love and honour you, howsoever I be.

Your forsaken friend and freed servant,

Fr. St. Alban.

To the Marquis of Buckingham.

My very good Lord,

It is in vain to cure the accidents of a disease, except the cause be found, and removed. I know adversity is apprehensive; but I fear it is too true, that now I have lost honour, power, profit, and liberty, I have, in the end, lost that, which, to me, was more dear than all the rest, which is my friend. A change there is apparent and great; and nothing is more sure, than that nothing hath proceeded from and since my troubles, either towards your Lordship or towards the world, which hath made me unworthy of your undeserved favours or undesired promises. Good my Lord, deal so nobly with me, as to let me know, whether I stand upright in your favour, that either I may enjoy my wonted comfort, or see my griefs together; that I may the better order them; though,
though, if your Lordship should never think more of me, yet your former favours should bind me to be

Your Lordship's most obliged

and faithful servant,

FR. ST. ALBAN.

To the Marquis of BUCKINGHAM.

My very good Lord,

This extreme winter hath turned, with me, a weakness of body into a state, that I cannot call health, but rather sickness, and that more dangerous than felt, as whereby I am not likely to be able to wait upon your Lordship, as I desired, your Lordship being the person, of whom I promise myself more almost than of any other; and, again, to whom, in all loving affection, I desire no less to approve myself a true friend and servant. My desire to your Lordship is to admit this gentleman, my kinsman and approved friend, to explain to you my business, whereby to save further length of letter, or the trouble of your Lordship's writing back.

To Mr. TOBIE MATTHEW.

Good Mr. Matthew,

The event of the business, whereof you write, is, it may be, for the best: for seeing my Lord, of himself, beginneth to come about, quorum as yet? I could not in my heart suffer my Lord Digby to go hence without my thanks and acknowledgements.
ledgements. I send my Letter open, which I pray seal and deliver. Particulars I would not touch.

Your most affectionate and assured friend,

Fr. St. Alban.

To Mr. Tobie MattheW.

Good Mr. Matthew,

WHEN you write by pieces, it sheweth your continual care; for a flush of memory is not so much; and I shall be always, on my part, ready to watch for you, as you for me.

I will not fail, when I write to the Lord Marquis, to thank his Lordship for the message, and to name the nuntius. And, to tell you plainly, this care, they speak of, concerning my estate, was more than I looked for at this time; and it is that, which pleaseth me best. For my desires reach but to a fat otium. That is truth; and so would I have all men think, except the greatest; for I know patents, absque aliquid inde reddendo, are not so easily granted.

I pray my service to the Spanish Ambassador, and present him my humble thanks for his favour. I am much his servant; and ashes may be good for somewhat. I ever rest

Your most affectionate and assured friend,

Fr. St. Alban.

I have sought for your little book, and cannot find it. I had it one day with me in my coach. But sure it is safe; for I seldom lose books or papers.

C c 4
To the Lord Viscount St. Alban.

Most honoured Lord,

I have received your great and noble token and favour of the 9th of April, and can but return the humblest of my thanks for your Lordship's vouchsafing so to visit this poorest and unworthiest of your servants. It doth me good at heart, that, although I be not where I was in place, yet I am in the fortune of your Lordship's favour, if I may call that fortune, which I observe to be so unchangeable. I pray hard, that it may once come in my power to serve you for it; and who can tell, but that, as fortis imaginatio generat casum, so strange desires may do as much? Sure I am, that mine are ever waiting on your Lordship; and wishing as much happiness, as is due to your incomparable virtue, I humbly do your Lordship reverence.

Your Lordship's most obliged,

and humble servant,

Tobie Matthew.

Poste. The most prodigious wit, that ever I knew of my nation, and of this side of the sea, is of your Lordship's name, though he be known by another.

To the Lord Archbishop of York (g).

My very good Lord,

I must use a better style, than mine own, in say-
ing, Amor tuus undequaque se ostendit ex literis tuis

(g) Dr. Tobie Matthew.

proximis,
prœximis, for which I give your Grace many thanks, and so, with more confidence, continue my suit to your Lordship for a lease absolute for twenty one years of the house, being the number of years, which my father and my predecessors fulfilled in it. A good fine requires certainty of term; and I am well assured, that the charge I have expended, in repa- rations, amounting to 1000 marks at least already, is more than hath been laid out by the tenants, that have been in it since my remembrance, answerable to my particular circumstance, that I was born there, and am like to end my days there. Neither can I hold my hand; but, upon this encouragement, am like to be doing still, which tendeth to the improve- ment, in great measure, of the inheritance of your fee by superlapidations, if I may so call it, instead of dilapidations, wherewith otherwise it might be charged.

And whereas a state for life is a certainty, and not so well seen how it wears, a term of years makes me more depending upon you and your succession.

For the providing of your Lordship and your successors a house, it is part of the former covenant, wherein I desired not to be released.

So assuring myself of your grant and perfecting of this my suit; and assuring your Grace of my earnest desire and continual readiness to deserve well of you and yours chiefly, and likewise of the fee in any the causes or preeminences thereof, I commend your Grace to God's goodness, resting, &c.
The following letter being omitted in its proper place, between p. 44 and 45, is inserted from the original in the Advocate's library at Edinburgh.

To the King.

It may please your most excellent Majesty,

We have, with all possible care and diligence, considered Cotton's (b) cause, the former and the latter, touching the book and the letter in the gilt.

(b) The case of this gentleman will render the detail of it necessary for the illustration of this letter; and the circumstances of it, not known in our history, may be thought to deserve the reader's attention. He was a native of the West of England, and a recusant, against whom a proclamation was issued in June 1613, charging him with high treason against the King and State for having published a very scandalous and railing book against his Majesty, under the title of Balaam's Ais, which was dropt in the gallery at White-Hall. Just at the time of publishing this proclamation, he happened to cross the Thames, and enquiring of the watermen what news? they, not knowing him, told him of the proclamation. At landing, he muffled himself up in his cloak, to avoid being known; but had not gone many paces, when one Mr. Maine, a friend of his, meeting and discovering him, warned him of his danger; and being asked what he would advise him to do, recommended it to him to surrender himself; which he did to the Earl of Southampton. He denied himself to be the author of the libel: but his study being searched, among his papers were found many parts of the book, together with relics of those persons, who had been executed for the gunpowder treason, as one of Sir Everard Digby's fingers, a toe of Thomas Percy, some other part of Catesby or Rookwood, and a piece of one of Peter Lambert's ribs. He was kept prisoner in the Tower till March 1619, when the true author of the libel was discovered to be John Williams, a lawyer. The discovery was owing to this accident: a pursuivant in want of money, and devious to get some by his employment, waited at the Spanish Ambassador's door, to see if he could light upon any prey. At last came out Mr. Williams, unknown to the pursuivant; but carrying,
gilt apple, and have advisedly perused and weighed all the examinations and collections, which were formerly taken; wherein we might attribute a good deal of worthy industry and watchful inquiry to my Lord of Canterbury. We thought fit also to take some new examinations; which was the cause we certified no sooner. Upon the whole matter, we find the cause of his imprisonment just, and the suspicions and presumptions many and great; which we little need to mention, because your Majesty did relate and inforce them to us in better perfection, than we can express them. But, nevertheless, the proofs seem to us to amount to this, that it was possible he should be the man; and that

...
it was probable likewise, he was the man: but no
convincing proofs, that may satisfy a jury of life
and death, or that may make us take it upon our
conscience, or to think it agreeable to your Majesty's
honour (which, next our conscience to God, is the
deepest thing to us on earth) to bring it upon the
stage: which, notwithstanding we, in all humble-
ness, submit to your Majesty's better judgement.
For his liberty, and the manner of his delivery
(he having so many notes of a dangerous man)
we leave it to your princely wisdom. And so,
commending your Majesty to God's precious cu-
tody, we rest

Your Majesty's most humble

and bounden servants,

22 Jan. 1613.

Fr. Bacon.
H. Montagu.
H. Yelverton.
INDEX.

A.

ABBOT (George) Archbishop of Canterbury, 59, 80, 85.
Andrews (Dr. Lancelot) Bishop of Ely, 164. knew early of the Lord Chancellor's being engaged in writing his Novum Organum, 235.
Anne of Denmark, wife of King James I. 118.
Annesley (Sir Francis) Secretary of Ireland, 234.
Apothecaries incorporated by patent, 264, and notes (p) and (q).
Arundel (Thomas Earl of) sworn of the council in Scotland, 127. wishes Lord Viscount St. Alban well, 366.
Aylesbury (Thomas) 287.

B.

Bacon (Sir Edmund) his letter to Sir Francis Bacon, 99.
Bacon (Sir Francis) offends Queen Elizabeth by his speeches in parliament, 1. his discourse touching the safety of the Queen's person, 2, 5.
4. speeches drawn up by him for the Earl of Essex's device, 43 & seqq. arrested at the suit of a goldsmith, 16, 17, 18. substance of a letter written by him to the Queen for the Earl of Essex, 19. insulted by the Attorney General Coke, 22. arrested again, 23. desires to be knighted, 24. 25. going to marry an Alderman's daughter, 24, and note (q). his letter to Ioan Casaubon, 26. writes to the King on the death of the Earl of Salisbury, Lord Treasurer, 25—32. his letter to the King touching his Majesty's estate in general, 32—34. on the order of Baronets, 34. his charge against Mr. White-locke, 36. letter to the King on the death of the Lord Chief Justice Fleming, 41. his letters to Mr. John Murray, 45, & seqq. supplement to his speech against Owen, 49, 50. thanks to Sir George Villiers for a message to him of a promise of the Chancellor's place, 57. questions legal for the Judges in the case of the Earl and Countess of Somerset, 61. his heads of the charge against the Earl of Somerset, 63. his letter to Sir George Villiers relating to that Earl, 68, 71. his remembrances of the King's declaration against the Lord Chief Justice Coke, 96. sends the King a warrant to review Sir Edward Coke's Reports, 102. his remembrances to the King on his Majesty's going to Scotland, 105. his additional instructions...
INDEX.

tions to Sir John Digby, 109, his account of council busi-
ness, 116. cafes in Chancery
recommended to him by the
Earl of Buckingham, 113, and
note (b). 119, &c. recom-
mends Sir Thomas Edmondes
to his niece for an husband,
114. desirous to have York-
house, 117, 392. confined to his
chamber by a pain in his legs,
119, 120. has not one caufe
in his court unheard, 120.
resides some time at Dorset-
house, 121. complains that the
Earl of Buckingham writes
deeldomer in the Cokes
Earl's brother and Sir Edward
Coke's daughter, 129—133.
the King's answer to that let-
ter, 133. on ill terms with
Secretary Winwood, 134.
note (w). Earl of Bucking-
ham exasperated against him,
138. reconciled, 144. his ad-
vice to the King about re-
viving the commiollion of suits,
142. speaks with the Judges
concerning commendams,
146. his great dispatch of
business in Chancery, 156.
created Lord Verulam, 130,
note (b). desirous of being one
of the Commissioners to treat
with the Hollanders, 192.
returns thanks to the King
for a favour granted him, 199.
his letter to Frederic Count
Palatine, 200. ordered to ad-
monish the Judges for negli-
gence, 209. his advice, with
regard to currants and to-
bacco, followed by the King,
212. gives a charge in the
Star-Chamber, 227. draws
up rules for the Star-Cham-
ber, 230. advises the King
to sit in person in that court,
232. his letter to the King
with his Novum Organum,
235. thanks the King for
his acceptance of that work,
239. approves of the King's
judgement about the procla-
mation for calling a parlia-
ment, 240. notes of his speech,
in the Star-Chamber, against
Sir Henry Yelverton, 241.
his advice to the Marquis of
Buckingham concerning the
patents granted, 245. letter
of him and the two Chief
Justices, about parliament
business, 248. thanks the
King for creating him Vis-
count St. Alban, 256. his
speech to the parliament, 258.
his letter to the Marquis of
Buckingham about the pro-
ceedings of the Houfe of Com-
mons concerning grievances,
260. his letter to the King,
261. speaks in his own de-
fence at a conference, 262,
note (m). his letter to the
Marquis of Buckingham,
when the Houfe of Commons
began to accuse him of abuses
in his office, 263. his con-
cern in incorporating the ap-
ochecaries, 264. memoran-
da of what he intended to de-
lineer to the King, upon his
first access, after his troubles,
265. 268. proceedings against
him, 265. note (i). his notes
upon the cafe of Michael de la
Pole and others, 270. his letters
to Count Gondomar, 273. di-
rected to go to Gorhambury,
274. his letter to Charles
Prince
INDEX.

Prince of Wales, 275. to the King, 277, 271. grant of pardon to him, 279. his letter to Lord Keeper Williams, 281. his petition intended for the House of Lords, 282. his letter to Lord Digby, 283. to the Marquis of Buckingham, 284. memorial of a conference with the Marquis, 286. his history of the reign of King Henry VII. 291. his letter to the Duke of Lenox, 294. to the Marquis of Buckingham, 295, 296. to Mr. Tobie Matthew, 300. desirous to offer his house and lands at Gorhambury to the Marquis, 301, 302. his letter to the Marquis, 302. to the Lord Viscount Falkland, 307. to Lord Treasurer Cranfield, 308, 309. to Thomas Meautys, Esq; 311. to Mr. Tobie Matthew, 312. to the Queen of Bohemia, 313. to the Lord Keeper, 316. to the Marquis of Buckingham, 317. to the Countess of Buckingham, 320. to the Marquis of Buckingham, 324. memorial of his access to the King, ibid. 327. remembrances of what he was to say to the Lord Treasurer Cranfield, 327. his letter to the Marquis, 329, 331, 332. to Sir Francis Cottington, 333. he returns to Grey's Inn, ibid. and note (b). his letter to the King, 334. to Secretary Conway, ibid. to Count Gondomar, 336. to the Marquis of Buckingham, 337. is obliged to Secretary Conway, 338. his letter to Secretary Conway, ibid. desirous of the Provostship of Eton, ibid. intends to sell Gorhambury, 339. his papers on utury, ibid. his letter to Count Gondomar, 340. to the Earl of Bristol, 341. to Sir Francis Cottington, ibid. to Mr. Matthew, 342. to the Duke of Buckingham, ibid. 344. to Mr. Matthew, 345, 346. his history of Henry VIII. 346. 347. his letter to the Duke of Buckingham, 348, 349, 350. to the King with his book de Augmentis Scientiarum, 352. to the Prince with the same book, 351. his essay on friendship, 347. his conference with the Duke, 352, 353. 354, 355. letter of advice to the Duke, 358. defends his writ of summons to parliament, 363. his letter to Sir Francis Barnham, 364. to the Duke of Buckingham, 365, 366, 367, 368. to Sir Richard Wotton, 367. to Sir Humphrey May, 369, 381. to Sir Robert Pye, 376. to Edward Earl of Dorset, 377. letter to him from Mr. Roger Palmer, 379. to the Duke of Buckingham, 380. to Mons. d'Effiat, 382. to King James I. 383, 384. his petition to King James I. 385. his letters to the Marquis of Buckingham, 387, 388, 389, 390. to Mr. Matthew, 390, 391. to the Archbishop of York, 392. to the King on Cotton's cafe, 394. Bacon (Sir Nicolas) an old arrear demanded of him, 362. indebted to the crown, 378. Balaam's Ass, the title of a libel against King James I. 394. note (b).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Barnham</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barons:</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Basset (Robert)</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bayly (Dr. Lewis)</td>
<td>221, 222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baynton of Bainham</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Becher (William)</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Becher (William)</td>
<td>338, note (f)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Belfast (Lord)</td>
<td>354, 357, note (d)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benbow (Mr.)</td>
<td>289</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bennet (Sir John)</td>
<td>128, 238</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>讲究的</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bernardi (Philip)</td>
<td>197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bertram (John)</td>
<td>164, and note (o)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bingley (Sir John)</td>
<td>228</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blackstones (Sir Thomas)</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blundell (Sir Francis)</td>
<td>192, 234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bohemia (Queen of)</td>
<td>361, 362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Borough (John)</td>
<td>289, and note (q)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brackley (Viscount)</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brackley (Earl of Bridgewater)</td>
<td>117, 118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Britten (Sir Henry)</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bromley (Edward)</td>
<td>103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brooke (Fulk Grevile, Lord)</td>
<td>291, 292</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Buckingham (George Earl, &amp;c. of)</td>
<td>see Villiers (George.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Buckingham (Mary Countess of)</td>
<td>letter to her from Lord Bacon, 320, memorandums for his Lordship's conference with her, 328.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caesar (Sir Julius)</td>
<td>164, 171, 227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calvert (Sir George)</td>
<td>205 appointed to speak with the Countess of Exeter, 214, letter to him from the Lord Chancellor, 221.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Casaubon (Isaac)</td>
<td>letter to him from Sir Francis Bacon, 226.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cecil (Sir Robert)</td>
<td>21, 25, 29. character of him by the same, 26, 30, 31.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chamberlain (John)</td>
<td>Efq; a correspondent of Sir Dudley Carleton, 16.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chaworth (Sir George)</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clifford (Lady)</td>
<td>letter to her from the Lord Chancellor, 194.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coke (Edward)</td>
<td>Attorney General, inflicts Mr. Francis Bacon, 22. knighted, ibid. note (π), and made Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, ibid. innovations introduced by him into the laws and government, 53. fills part of the charge against the Earl of Somerset with many frivolous things, 66. answers for the Earl's jewels, 71. active in examining into the poising</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX.

ing Sir Thomas Overbury, 77. cited before the council, 99. and forbid to sit at Westminster, 91. letter of Lord Viscount Villiers concerning him, 93—96. remembrances of the King's declaration against him, 96. his letter to the King concerning the cause of murder or felony committed by one Englishman upon another in a foreign kingdom, 107. exasperates the Earl of Buckingham against the Lord Keeper Bacon, 138—141. his Reports examined by the Judges, 146. the Marquis of Buckingham has no power with him, 260. Colles (Mr.) recommended by Lord Vifcount St. Alban to Edward Earl of Dorset, 377.

Commemdams, 146.

Compton, (Spencer Lord) 225.

Conway (secretary) letter to him from Lord Vifcount St. Alban, 334. kind to Lord Vifcount St. Alban, 338. letter to him from that Lord, ibid. wishes that Lord well, 366.

Constable (Sir John) 225.

(Lady) ibid.

Cottington (Sir Francis) letters to him from Lord Vifcount St. Alban, 333; 341.

Cotton (Sir John) 163, 165, 167.

Cotton (Sir Robert) backward in furnishing Lord Bacon with materials for his life of King Henry VIII. 346.

Cotton (Sir Rowland) 172, and note (e), 176.

Cotton (Mr.) imprisoned on suspicion of being author of a libel against King James L 394. note (b).

Coventry (Sir Thomas) his character by Sir Francis Bacon, 101. did his part well in the prosecution of the Earl of Suffolk, 208. ordered to come well prepared for the King, 238. ordered to prepare a book for the King's signature, 253. made Attorney General, 254. his letter to the Lord Vifcount St. Alban just before he was made Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, 378.

Cox (Sir Richard) 46, and note (f).

Cranfield (Sir Lionel) 149, 153. some account of him, 154. note (n). made Lord Treasurer, 304. note (g).

Crew (Sir Randolph) 64, 202.

Cuffe (Henry) his remark on Lord Bacon's Novum Organum, 235. note (q).

D.

Dallington (Robert) 231.

Darby (Lord) of the North: his cause in the Star-Chamber against Gervase Markham, Esq.; 102. note (l).

Davies (Sir John) 205, and note (t).


Dennis (Gabriel) 197.

Digby (Sir John) 70, note (e). 87. additional instructions to him, 109. appointed to speak with the Countess of Exeter, 214. letter to him from Lord Vifcount St. Alban, 283, 341.

Digby (Thomas) 204.

Dd
INDEX.

DODDERIDGE (Judge) 164.
DOUGLAS (Sir Robert) 231.
D'OYLEY (Robert) 229.
Dutch merchants prosecuted for exporting gold and silver coin, 191, 206, 211, 215, 216, 220, 221.
DYER (Sir Edward) 152.

EDMONDES (Sir Thomas) recommended by the Lord Keeper Bacon to his niece for an husband, 114.
EFFIAT (Monfieur d') letter to him from the Lord Viscount St. Alban, 382.
EGERTON (Sir Thomas) Lord Keeper of the Great Seal: letter to him from Mr. Francis Bacon, 16, twice Lord High Steward, 73, employed in the inquiry into the death of Sir Thomas Overbury, 77, joint letter of him and Sir Francis Bacon concerning the Lord Chief Justice Coke, 93—96, dies, 106, note (q.)
EGERTON, (Sir Rowland and Mr. Edward) their cause in Chancery, 147, 161.
ENGLEFELD (Sir Francis) his letter to the Lord Keeper Bacon, 149, fined for charging the Lord Keeper Williams with bribery, ibid. note (b), his cause in Chancery recommended by the Marquis of Buckingham, 181, 191.
ERNEST, Archduke of Austria, 3, note (d).

ESSEX (Earl of) his device exhibited before Queen Elizabeth, 4, note (f), substance of a letter written to the Queen for him by Mr. Francis Bacon, 15.

EXETER (Countess of) falsely accused by Lady Lake and Lady Roos, 202, note (r), her cause in the Star-Chamber, ibid. and 213, 214.

F.

FLEMING (Sir Thomas) Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, dies, 41, and note (g).
FOLIAME (Francis) 185.
FOWLE (Mr.) 177.
FRANCIS (Matthew) Serjeant at Arms, has a quartet with Mr. Colles, 377.
FULLERTON (Sir James) letter to him from the Lord Keeper Bacon, 160.

G.

GAGE (Mr.) 223, 347, 349.
GALILEO, 60, 195.
GAWEN (Sir John) 173.
GERARD (Sir Thomas) 151, recommended by the Marquis of Buckingham to the Lord Chancellor, 237.
GODFREY, Bishop of Luca, 50.
GONDOMAR (Count de) his resentment against Sir Walter Raleigh, 178, intirled by the apprentices of London, ibid. and note (e), sends his compliments to the Lord Chancellor, 226, writes a letter to his Lordship, 221, letter to him from Lord St. Alban, 336, letters to him from Lord Bacon, 273, 336, 340, a great friend of his Lordship, 300, in no credit with the Prince of Wales or Duke of Buckingham, 347.
GOODERE (Sir Henry) 58, 85.
GRANDISON (Lord) 351.
INDEX.

Greville (Sir Fulke) Chancellor of the Exchequer, 217, See Brooke.

H.
Hansbyes, their cause in Chancery, 177 and note (d).
Harper (Sir John) 151.
Hatton (Lady) removes her daughter, to prevent her being married to Sir John Villiers, 134, note (a).
Haughton (Sir Richard) 152.
Heath (Robert) made Solicitor General, 256, 285.
Helwisse (Sir Gervase) Lieutenant of the Tower, 75, note (r). discovered to be concerned in the murder of Sir Thomas Overbury, 75, 76.
Henry (Prince) influence of Sir Thomas Overbury to him, 65. his death imputed to the Earl of Somerset, 66, 67.
Henry II. left King of France of value, except Henry IV. 356.
Hobart (Sir Henry) 42, and note (i), 52, 164, 180, 206.
likely to die, 253.
Hornsey (Francis) 183.
Houghteron (Sir Gilbert) 51.
Huddy (John and Richard) 167.
Huieley (Thomas) his cause recommended by the Earl of Buckingham to the Lord Keeper Bacon, 153.
Hunson (John Baron of) 51.
Hunt (John) 168.
Huntingdon (Earl of) 151.
Hutton (Judge) 164.
Hutton (Luke) personated by Lady Roos, 223.

I.
James I. (King) apprehensive of being taxed by the Earl of Somerset on his trial, p. 62, and note (p). his apostilles on the heads of the charge against the Earl of Somerset, 66, 67, inquires into the poisoning of Sir Thomas Overbury, 75, 77, goes to Scotland, 108, note (s). holds a parliament in Scotland, 123, his answer to a letter of the Lord Keeper, 133, angry with his Lordship and the Attorney General, 138—141, 142, 144, promises to forgive his Lordship, 145, his remark on Lord Bacon's Novum Organum, 236, note (q). looks over the manuscript of his Lordship's history of the reign of King Henry VII. 291. memorial of Lord Bacon's access to his Majesty, 321. letters to him from Lord Vi-counf St. Albam, 384, 385.
Ingram (Sir Arthur) 285, 304, 308, 309, 310, 326.
Jones (Dr. Thomas) Archbishop of Dublin: letter to him from the Lord Chancellor Bacon, 171.
Jones (Sir William) Chief Justice of Ireland: letter to him from the Lord Chancellor Bacon, 172.
Ireland, safety of it recommended, 354, 355.

K.
Killigrew (Sir Robert) 216.
Kirkham (Mr.) 219.

L.
Lake (Sir Thomas) Secretary of State, 58, 86. sworn of Dd 2 the
INDEX.

Council in Scotland, 127. 213.
LAKE (Lady) her submission, 213.
LEIGH (Barnaby) 152.
LENOX (Duke of) Lord Steward of the King's household, employed in the inquiry into the poisoning of Sir Thomas Overbury, 77. sent to the Lord Chancellor, 207. his letter to Lord St. Alban, 293.
LERMA (Duke of) 223.
LEWIS (Mr.) license granted to him, 201.
LEY (Sir James) Lord Ley, Lord Treasurer, well affected to Lord Vifcount St. Alban's interest, 376. and note («). LOVEACE (Leonard) 229.
LOWDER (Mr.) Solicitor to the Queen, made one of the Barons of the Exchequer in Ireland, 128. 136.

M.
MANSELL (Sir Robert) committed to the Marshaliea, and brought before the Council-Table, 26. 47, and note (f). his account brought in slowly in the King's opinion, 185.
MARKHAM (Gervase) Esq; his quarrel with Lord Darcy, 102.
MARTIN (Richard) Esq; his letter to Sir Francis Bacon, 88. account of him, ibid. note (a).
MARTIN (Lady) widow of Sir Richard Martin: her cause recommended to the Lord Chancellor. by the Marquis of Buckingham, 253.
MATTHEW (Dr. Tobie) Archbishop of York, 117. 392.
MATTHEW (Tobie) acts the part of the Squire in the Earl of Essex's device, 5. note (f). letter to Sir Francis Bacon, 58. account of him, ibid. note (d). letters to Sir Francis Bacon, 80. 83. 85. 178. 193. 223. 228. letter to him from the Lord St. Alban, 312. he advertises his Lordship of a design of the Roman Catholics, 317. 318. a good friend of Lord Vifcount St. Alban, 341. letter to him from that Lord, 342, 316. 347. 349. arrives at Madrid, 343. a petition of Lord Vifcount St. Alban put into his hands, 368. letters to him from Lord Vifcount St. Alban, 390. 391. his letter to that Lord, 392.
MAULE (Patrick) 162. 246.
MAXWELL (James) wishes Lord Vifcount St. Alban well, 366.
MAXWELL (Robert) 168.
MAY (Sir Humphrey) Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, 238. letters to him from the Lord Bacon, 264. 369.
MAYNWARING (Sir Arthur) 196.
MEAUTYS (Thomas) brought to kiss the King's hand, 274. letters to the Lord St. Alban, 288. 290. 292. 304. 305. 310. 318. 326.
MITCHELL (Sir Francis) 162. 170. note (ii).
MOMPENSON (Sir Giles) 162. 170. note (m). 213. 217. 218. 246.
MONK (Sir Thomas) 169. and note (k).
MONTAGU (Sir Henry) 64. made Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, 101. 164. 180. 205. made Lord Treasurer, 216. 247.

Mon...
INDEX.

MONTAGU (Dr. James) Bishop of Winchester, 164.
Montgomery (Philip Earl of) 290. commended for his honesty, 354, 356.
Morley acts the part of the Secretary of State, in the Earl of Essex's device, 5, note (f).
Mountain (Dr. George) Bishop of London, 311.
Murray (John) letters to him from Sir Francis Bacon, 45, & seqq. created a Viscount and Earl, 45, note (r).
Murray (Thomas) Provost of Eton, dies, 334, note (i).

N.

Naunton (Sir Robert) Surveyor of the Court of Wards, attends the King to Scotland, 122. made Secretary of State, 158, note (g). recommended to the Duke of Buckingham, for his Grace to apply to, 356.
Novum Organum presented to the King, with a letter, 235. the King's and Mr. Cuffe's remarks upon it, 236, note (9).

O.

Ormonde (Walter Earl of) 184, 185, 191, 192.
Overbury (Sir Thomas) letter to him from the Earl of Somerlet, 40. passages of his letter to the Earl, 65. interesting to the Queen and Prince, ibid. his cypher with the Earl, 65, 66. poisoned, 74.
Owen: condemned for traiterous speeches, 49, note (x).

Oxford (Henry Vere, Earl of) letter of him from the Lord Viscount St. Alban, 363.

P.

Packer (John) 69, and note (i). an ancient friend of Lord Bacon, 385.
Palatine (Frederic Count) letter to him from the Lord Chancellor, 200.
Papists: 353, 357, 358, 359, 360.
Parham (Sir Edward) 60.
Parliament: consultations in it in the first year of King Charles I. 370—376.
Peacham (Edmund) 45, and note (i).
Peacock (Mr.) examined, 228.
Personates Atkins, ibid.
Petre (Sir George) 380.
Phillips (Sir Edward) 265.
Plowden (Edmund) 90, note (c).
Porter (Endymion) 231.
Poulet (John) Esq; 49, and note (w).
Puckering (Sir John) Lord Keeper of the Great Seal: letter to him from Mr. Francis Bacon, 1.

Puritans, 359.

R.

Ralegh (Sir Walter) resentment against him by the Spanish Ambassador, 178. letter from the
the Lord Chancellor to the
King concerning the manner
of proceeding against him,
181. declaration of his demea-
nour and carriage: 187.
RAMSEY (David) 231.
REFEREES: meaning of that
word 260, and note (l).
ROOS (William Lord) 58, 81.
owes money to Mr. Tobie
Matthew, 225.
ROOS (Lady) perforates Luke
Hutton, 222.
RUTLAND (Francis Countess of)
116, and note (f).

S.

SACKVILLE (Sir Edward) named
to be Chairman of the Com-
mmittee of the House of Com-
mmons, for inquiring into the
abuses of the courts of Justice,
265, note (r). zealous for
Lord Viscount St. Alban,
his letter to Lord St. Alban,
314.

ST. JOHN (Sir Oliver) Lord De-
puty of Ireland, 113, 171.
and note (a).

SCOTLAND: account of the par-
liament held there in 1616,
121.

SELDEN (John) his letter to
Lord St. Alban, 197.

SHREWSBURY (Gilbert Earl of)
75.

SHUTE (Mr.) carries a message
from Sir George Villiers to
Sir Francis Bacon, 57.

SIMCOCK: his deposition, 65.

SKIPWITH (Henry) his cause in
Chancery recommended by
the Earl of Buckingham, 113.

SMITH (Sir Thomas) 110, and
note (u).

SOMERSET (Robert Car, Earl
of) letter from him to
Sir Thomas Overbury, 40.
questions of Sir Francis Ba-
ccon relating to his case, 61.
heads of the charge against
him, 63. charged with trea-
sions and plots with Spain,
70. and note (k). delivered
out of the Tower, 292. par-
doned, and to be allowed to
fit in parliament, 382.

SOMERSET (Frances Countess of)
questions to the Judges re-
lating to her case, 61. Dr.
Whiting ordered to preach be-
fore her, 70. charge prepared
by Mr. Francis Bacon against
her, in case the pleaded guil-
ty, 72. delivered out of the
Tower, 292.

SQUIRE (Edward) executed for
treason, 16, note (h).

STANFORD (Sir William) 107.

STANHOPE (Lord) 151.

STANLEY: imprisoned in the
Tower, 16, note (h).

STEWARD (Dr.) 188, 189, 192.

SUCKLING (Sir John) 243, 366.

SUFFOLK (Thomas Howard,
Earl of) prosecuted in the
Star-Chamber, 198, and note
(p), 205, 206, 207, 208,
210, 219, 227: admitted a-
again to sit in parliament,
382.

SYDENHAM (Sir John) 48, and
note (u).

T.

THOMAS (Valentine) accuses the
King of Scots, 16, note (h).

THYNNE (Sir Thomas) 152.

TIPPING (Sir George) 165.

TOWER.
INDEX.

TOWERSON (Mr.) merchant of London, brother to Captain Gabriel Towerson, one of the English put to death at Amboyna, 87, note (z).

TRASK (John) prosecuted in the Star-Chamber, 214, and note (a).

TRESHAM (Sir Lewis) his suit in Chancery recommended by the Earl of Buckingham, 119.

TROTT (Mr.) 164, note (p).

TYNDALL (Sir John) killed by John Bertram, 104.

TYTHES: a great cause of them concerning the benefices in London, 164.

VANLORE (Peter) fined in the Star-Chamber; 216.

VAUGHAN (Lord) 333, and note (g).

VERNON (Lady) 173.


VILLIERS (Sir Christopher) 152.

WAKE (Isaac) letter to him from the Lord Chancellor Bacon, 178.

WALSINGHAM (Sir Francis) famous for having good intelligence,

WALTER (Sir John) 260.

WENTWORTH (Sir John) his cause recommended to the Lord Chancellor by the Marquis of Buckingham, 194, 195.

WESTON (Richard) tried for the poisoning of Sir Thomas Overbury, 77, 78.

WHITE (Richard) 195.

WHITELOCKE (James) charge against him by Sir Francis Bacon, 36. some account of him, note (r). set at liberty, 40. note (f).

WHITING (Dr. John) 70, and note (l), Wilt-
INDEX.

Williams (Dr. John) Bishop of Lincoln, and Lord Keeper, receives many applications from the Marquis of Bucking-
ham relating to causes in his Court, 113, note (b). His letter to Lord Bacon, 279. Letter to him from Lord Ba-
con, 316. His letter to Lord Bacon, 330.

Williams (Mr.) licence granted to him, 201.

Williams (Sir Roger) 5, note.

Williams (John) discovered to be author of a libel against King James I. 394, note (b). Executed, ibid.

Winwood (Sir Ralph) reflected on by the Lord Keeper Ba-
con, 134, note (a). Dies, 158, note (g).

Wolsey (Cardinal) 278.


Wyche (Mr.) 186, 228.

Yelverton (Sir Henry) Solicitor General, 103. His letter to Lord Keeper Bacon, 138-141. Letter to him from the Lord Chancel-
lor Bacon, 164. Passes a strange book to one Hall for making denizens, 189, 192. Exhibits an information a-
gainst the Dutch merchants, for transporting gold, 191, 206. Grows pert with the Lord Chancellor, 226. Re-
lected on by the Lord Chancellor, 238. Notes of the Lord Chancellor's Speech in his cause in the Star-Cham-

FINIS.